

VOLUME II of III

STATE OF SOUTH CAROLINA
IN THE SUPREME COURT

Certiorari to Newberry County
Honorable , Circuit Court Judge

THEIA DARION MCARDLE,

PETITIONER

V.

STATE OF SOUTH CAROLINA,

RESPONDENT

APPELLATE CASE NO. 2025-000352

APPENDIX

SARAH E. SHIPE
Appellate Defender

ALAN WILSON
Attorney General

South Carolina Commission on Indigent Defense
Division of Appellate Defense
PO Box 11589
Columbia, SC 29211-1589
(803) 734-1330

ZACHARY W. JONES
Assistant Attorney General
P.O. Box 11629
Columbia, SC 29211
(803) 734-3737

ATTORNEY FOR PETITIONER

ATTORNEYS FOR RESPONDENT

INDEX

INDEX	i
TRIAL TRANSCRIPT DATED APRIL 4-8, 2016	1
APPLICATION FOR POST-CONVICTION RELIEF	1173
RETURN AND MOTION TO DISMISS	1180
AMENDED APPLICATION FOR POST-CONVICTION RELIEF	1186
EVIDENTIARY HEARING TRANSCRIPT DATED AUGUST 2, 2022	1190
ORDER OF DISMISSAL	1240
INDICTMENT	1263
SENTENCE SHEET	1264

1 explained to them what happened. And they said, "Well, are
2 you the biological father?" I said, "No. My name's not on
3 the birth certificate." So they said, "So if she comes for
4 her child we can't stop her." I said, "I don't plan on
5 stopping her. But she did strike her son. You guys need to
6 do something about that."

7 Q So you called the sheriff's department in Spartanburg
8 County?

9 A Yes, sir. I did.

10 Q And said this lady has been beating her child?

11 A Yes. And then --

12 Q And the sheriff came out and said, "We can't do
13 anything about that. You have to call DSS."

14 A Yes. And she wasn't supposed to be at the address
15 anyways due to another incident that happened in Spartanburg
16 County.

17 Q Do you remember what deputy that was?

18 A No, I do not remember off the top of my head. It's
19 over a year.

20 Q Have you seen any paperwork on that call?

21 A No, sir. I did not.

22 Q Is it possible that sheriff came to your house on a
23 child abuse call and just forgot to make any kind of record
24 of it?

25 A I'm not sure. I asked them not to make a big deal over

1 it because we weren't supposed to be living together because
2 of a no contact order.

3 Q It doesn't sound like good police work, does it?

4 A No, sir.

5 Q And then -- so the sheriff's department said don't call
6 us, call DSS?

7 A DSS said call the sheriff's department.

8 Q Oh, so you called the DSS agency --

9 A Yes, I called both.

10 Q -- and they said don't call us about child abuse, call
11 the sheriff's department?

12 A They said they don't take children in this state. Call
13 the police department. So that's what I did.

14 Q So apparently they don't even investigate claims of
15 abuse then?

16 A I'm guessing not.

17 Q That ain't really an efficient DSS office, is it? Do
18 you remember what the date was that you called DSS?

19 A Not off the top of my head, sir.

20 Q And the phone you would have called DSS on was the
21 phone that your girlfriend was actually paying for, wasn't
22 it?

23 A Actually for a phone that I had actually had paid for
24 with some of my calls. She had gave me the phone because it
25 was a phone she had owed to me for breaking my other phone

1 and destroying some of my other stuff, property as well. So
2 she let me get that phone and I was actually paying my own
3 bill off of that whenever I had did my own calls. And I
4 actually had paid for a phone for her too as well, because
5 her son had broken her phone and she had spanked him for
6 that. So I had gotten her another phone from the very same
7 place that I was paying my phone from.

8 Q We seem to want to know where you were getting your
9 money to pay the phone bill from.

10 A From my calls that I had made.

11 Q But I thought you said you only did that for two weeks
12 and didn't like it?

13 A I still did some after a while. Remember I stopped
14 before I started at whatchamacallit. Lear. I figured that
15 I'd do it just to get a little bit of money. But it wasn't
16 that long. I wasn't doing it for like continuously like
17 that. I might do like one or two.

18 Q Male escorts make a whole lot less money than female
19 escorts, don't they?

20 A It depends on if you're taking every single call or
21 not.

22 Q What was the car -- the purple car that was left at the
23 mobile home in Spartanburg?

24 A That was her first car.

25 Q What kind of car are we talking?

1 A It was a Nissan Sentra.

2 Q A Nissan Sentra?

3 A Yes, sir.

4 Q What happened to that car?

5 A She had disconnected the go plugs and whatnot, and we
6 had argued at Moscerelli's house, because she was acting
7 drunk and being argumentative there. And me and James Dunn
8 decided to leave, and she had went outside and was fiddling
9 with the car and whatnot. And I told her, I said I wanted
10 to leave and whatnot because I didn't want to sit here and
11 look at her act crazy and be drunk. So whenever me and
12 James jumped in the car -- because James was drunk and he
13 was sick, so I had to take him back to the house. I didn't
14 --

15 Q What did you say that Theia disconnect?

16 A The go plugs. It was either the go plugs or something
17 on the car. I didn't know exactly what she did. It was
18 nighttime. Her and Dave were outside. All I know is
19 whenever I got out there to the car it wasn't acting right.
20 But I was still able to drive it back to the house.

21 Q Is this the same Dave that you said didn't see her
22 strike Theia -- strike Minor in his own house?

23 A Yes. The very same David that said in the motion that
24 he figured that there was some form of child abuse and had
25 let her know before to stop being so hard on Minor as

1 well, and stop yelling at him and stop being so mean to him.

2 Q The same David who apparently while he was in the same
3 home didn't hear the child the child beaten while she was --
4 crying while she was beating him in the home?

5 A She struck him one time. He cried. He's cried plenty
6 of times in that house.

7 Q Just unfortunately Mr. Dave was not in that room when
8 that happened.

9 A James was though for other instants.

10 Q Now, getting back to the purple car.

11 A Yes, sir.

12 Q You are at James' house?

13 A I'm at David's house.

14 Q David's house?

15 A Yes.

16 Q And David lives in Laurens?

17 A Yes, sir.

18 Q And Theia starts acting out.

19 A Drunk.

20 Q Drunk and acting out, and you say I'm leaving?

21 A I told her, I said, we need to leave because I'd rather
22 not be at David's house sleeping in his bed and whatnot.

23 I'd rather go home. And you've been drinking too much.

24 You need to chill out. Her and James both were drunk and
25 whatnot.

1 Q Her buddy James as also acting out, too?

2 A No. James was inside the -- inside the room with me,
3 talking with me. She was in there with David yelling and
4 screaming and acting foolish and whatnot, swinging at David
5 and everything.

6 Q And she got so angry at you for not -- for telling you
7 not to leave that she went out and yanked the spark plugs?

8 A It was more than that. We got into an argument, her --
9 talking about how she beats up on all these people. And I
10 said, "You're jumping on -- beating up people that are
11 smaller than you." She was bragging about how she tossed
12 some woman and broken her hip and how she beat on this other
13 chick for saying something to her and whatever, so --

14 Q You were standing up for **Minor** then?

15 A No. I was standing up for other folks and told her to
16 chill out and stop acting crazy.

17 Q Now, Laurens is probably how far from Spartanburg?

18 A From **[REDACTED]**, his house?

19 Q Yes, sir.

20 A Like maybe like 30 minute drive.

21 Q So how long did it take you all to push that purple car
22 from Laurens back to the house without the spark plugs?

23 A We didn't push. David actually saw where she had
24 disconnected them and whatnot and helped me to get it put
25 back on and we drove out back there.

1 Q So you got the car working again?

2 A Yes. But it wasn't working fully completely.

3 Q So why did Theia have to get a new car?

4 A Because whenever you start a car up once the spark
5 plugs are done, it messes like -- I think, I'm guessing the
6 fuel or something starts happening or something goes wrong
7 with it. I don't know off the top of my head or remember
8 off the top of my head. But you're not supposed to try to
9 crank a car without the spark plugs being started up.

10 Q Are you sure it's not because Theia and Minor were
11 leaving you and then you spanked (sic) the spark plugs while
12 the car was in Spartanburg so she couldn't leave?

13 A It was nothing of the sort like that.

14 Q You didn't do anything with the key?

15 A No, sir. I didn't.

16 Q What about now taking the carseat out of the car?

17 A I didn't take the carseat out of the car. The carseat
18 she took out of the car.

19 Q Well, why did she have to get another carseat for --

20 A Because the car was locked at that point in time. I
21 didn't take the car -- the car keys out. But there was a
22 person that was there that actually can attest to what
23 happened that night, but I'm guessing --

24 Q Who is that?

25 A James Dunn. I'm guessing you didn't subpoena him

- 1 though.
- 2 Q Where is James Dunn now?
- 3 A He lives in Asheville.
- 4 Q Ms. McArdle over there lives in Asheville, doesn't she?
- 5 A Yes, but she wasn't there for present.
- 6 Q Now, on December 29th, apparently for the first time
- 7 ever you're saying that Theia bit Minor
- 8 A No. She's bitten him before.
- 9 Q He bit her, she got angry and bit him back?
- 10 A Yes, sir.
- 11 Q So you're saying that there should be some bite marks
- 12 on that child's body?
- 13 A She didn't bite him hard. I'm not saying she tried to
- 14 take like a chunk out of him. But she did bite him.
- 15 Q So she bite him but not hard enough to mark his body
- 16 up?
- 17 A Yes, sir.
- 18 Q Now, what did you all have for dinner the night of the
- 19 29th?
- 20 A Steak garlic bread, either mashed potatoes or corn.
- 21 Q Well, you told the prosecutors just two weeks ago or so
- 22 that you were sure you had mashed potatoes and not corn.
- 23 A I'm not sure which it was now honestly. I know we had
- 24 steak, garlic bread. I'm not sure if it was mashed potatoes
- 25 or corn. It could have been -- I think it was mashed

1 potatoes though.

2 Q They told you mashed potatoes couldn't be right because
3 you've told the cops you ate corn, is that right?

4 A And then I did let them know, I said it could have been
5 either/or. I don't remember off the top of my head.

6 Q Now, **Minor** threw up on the night of the 29th?

7 A Yes, sir. He did.

8 Q But the vomit we see in the toilet was yours?

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q Did the toilet not flush? Why would you leave that in
11 there like that?

12 A Because I didn't think to flush it, and the toilet
13 didn't act right. You had to take the top off of it and go
14 inside and reach in and grab it and all that stuff, because
15 it wasn't functioning right.

16 Q So how long were you going to leave vomit in the toilet
17 like that?

18 A I was actually going to get that corrected once I
19 started filling it with water. We had to let our landlord
20 know that the toilet wasn't working.

21 Q You recall what kind of symptoms you had that night?
22 What illness you had on the night of the 29th?

23 A My stomach was hurting.

24 Q Did you ever have it diagnosed? Was it a flu? Was it
25 a stomach bug? What was it?

1 A No, I never got it diagnosed.

2 Q Is it possible **Minor** could have caught what you had?

3 A I don't know.

4 Q Well, you said he was throwing up just like you.

5 A Yes, sir.

6 Q Are you sure that **Minor** threw up in the master bed?

7 A Yes, sir. Some of this stuff off his bed was in there
8 with us, too, as well. He was sitting on one of his
9 pillows, I know that much, inside of our room.

10 Q So if the police had looked at the master bedroom they
11 should have found vomit on the master bed, right?

12 A Yes, sir.

13 Q How much did he throw up? Do you know?

14 A It wasn't a lot. It didn't look like a lot, at least.

15 Q But they did find vomit on his -- do you know why the
16 vomit is on his pillow, his cases, on the air bed?

17 A I just told you he had some of his pillows in our room.

18 Q And so, he was kind enough to put them on his own bed?

19 A I had cleaned it off and put it on his bed whenever I
20 laid him down. Or I tried to clean it up a little bit.
21 That's why there's vomit on some of the clothing and
22 everything.

23 Q Who put all those clothes in the hamper?

24 A I did, after I finished cleaning this stuff up in our
25 room.

1 Q That's right, because Theia wasn't there. She was on a
2 call, right?

3 A Theia was actually there. That's the only time.
4 Because I just explained, when I was talking to the
5 Solicitor earlier, she left after he had vomited and
6 everything, after he had already took his bath and
7 everything.

8 Q You were the one that cleaned the house?

9 A For the most part, yes.

10 Q Did you do the laundry?

11 A We both did the laundry. We took it to the laundry
12 mat.

13 Q But you were the one who put the clothes with the vomit
14 in the hamper that night?

15 A Yes, sir. After I cleaned up.

16 Q Including the -- now, was that your grey sweatshirt
17 that had vomit on it?

18 A Grey sweatshirt?

19 Q Did you have a grey hoodie?

20 A Yes, sir. I did.

21 Q Is it possible you may have thrown up while you were
22 wearing that?

23 A I what?

24 Q Were you wearing your grey hoodie that night?

25 A I don't remember off the top of my head, sir. I

1 believe I had on a black hoodie whenever I came to Newberry
2 at least.

3 Q Do you know why vomit -- your vomit is on the grey
4 hoodie in the hamper?

5 A Probably because I vomited on it. It's the only thing
6 I can think of.

7 Q Now, you said to the jury that when you ran out with
8 **Minor** to the hospital you said that Theia must have been
9 parking the car or doing whatever she does?

10 A Yes, sir.

11 Q And you said she was gone about 15 minutes?

12 A Ten to 15 minutes. Yes, sir.

13 Q is it possible you're embellishing that time a little
14 bit to try to make Theia look bad?

15 A No, sir.

16 Q Could it have been as little as two, two and a half
17 minutes?

18 A No, sir.

19 Q You're sure it's closer to 10 to 15 minutes?

20 A That's what it seemed like, sir. Because I was in
21 there and actually had a full conversation with the nurse
22 about what was going on with him and everything.

23 Q When **Minor** was not responsive in the car you did
24 everything you could to save him?

25 A Yes, sir. CPR, was pinching his fingers, was trying to

1 wake him up to see what was going on with him.

2 Q Now, this isn't -- **Minor** was too small to be in like
3 a high seat. He had to be in one of the actual strap on
4 across his shoulder seats, right?

5 A Yes, sir.

6 Q The safety restraint system?

7 A I don't think he was small enough to be in one of
8 those, but that's the one she got for him.

9 Q And those things are buckled in to the metal parts of
10 the car, aren't they?

11 A No, that one wasn't buckled in all the way, securely at
12 least.

13 Q Don't those have like clips on either side of them and
14 then there are little hoops in the seat of the car that you
15 click them into?

16 A I'm not sure how that one was set up. But it wasn't
17 hooked inside the car correctly. It was just sat in there.

18 Q You were in one of the holding cells in the courthouse
19 earlier this week, weren't you?

20 A Yes, sir.

21 Q Is there a reason, or did you carve **Minor's** name with
22 his date of birth and date of death into one of those
23 holding cells?

24 A No, sir. I didn't.

25 Q Who was the first officer that you met on December

1 30th?

2 A At the hospital or whenever we got to the police
3 station?

4 Q Well, who was -- at the hospital did you meet any --
5 did any of the police officers come and speak to you?

6 A There was a woman that came and said something briefly.
7 I didn't say -- we didn't speak too much. And there was a
8 heavysset white guy with a bald head that separated us and
9 just had us sit apart.

10 Q I apologize, Mr. Bowman. But I'm having a little bit
11 of trouble hearing you. You're going to have to speak up.

12 A I said it was a woman that came and talked to us, and
13 then there was a heavysset tall white officer with a bald
14 head that came and separated us.

15 Q Was the woman who spoke to you a police officer or a
16 highway -- I mean, a hospital employee?

17 A There was a hospital person that came and talked to us.
18 But it was also an officer that came and talked to us.

19 Q And you told -- do you remember meeting Chief -- now
20 Chief McClurken?

21 A I met him whenever we got to the police statement, yes.

22 Q Where is Chief McClurken? Do you recognize --

23 A He's behind Mr. Stumbo.

24 Q With the green top? Kind of the aqua blue and teal
25 tie?

1 A And teal tie, yes.

2 Q At that time he was an investigator; is that right?

3 A Yes, sir.

4 Q Did you tell him that **Minor** had been with you that
5 entire day?

6 A I said he was with me and his mother the whole day.

7 Q And have you had access to all of the State's evidence
8 in this case? You've had a chance to go over all the
9 reports?

10 A I've went over most of them. The jail doesn't let me h
11 handle all my motion and discovery. I just have bits and
12 pieces of my motion and discovery.

13 Q Just bits and pieces?

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q You haven't gone over with either or both of your
16 attorneys the evidence in this case?

17 A I went over it with Mr. Brown once when I was in
18 Laurens County. But the majority -- the bulk of it is
19 inside of my property in Newberry County.

20 Q You hadn't had access to read every single report in
21 this file?

22 A I've read the majority of them. But as I said, I don't
23 have access to all of my full motion and discovery.

24 Q Now, you told Chief McClurken that **Minor** pooped in
25 his Pull-Up earlier and that you, quote/unquote, "popped him

1 in the butt with your hand," right?

2 A That was whenever he defecated on himself inside the
3 bathtub.

4 Q I'm just asking you whether you told that to
5 Investigator McClurken.

6 A That was my initial report. Yes, sir.

7 Q And that when you hit **Minor** fell head first
8 into the bathtub, but **Minor** was okay.

9 A Yes, sir. That was my initial report.

10 Q In fact, **Minor** was fine, you added?

11 A Yes, sir.

12 Q And then you and **Minor** went to watch TV?

13 A Yes, sir.

14 Q And then you left **Minor** in the bathtub by himself?

15 A Yes, sir.

16 Q Did you help bathe **Minor**

17 A Not that night.

18 Q Did you ever take showers with **Minor**

19 A A few times. Not every time. I didn't really feel
20 comfortable with him being in the bathtub with me or in the
21 shower with me.

22 Q Is it fair to say that you've told some -- at some
23 times you've told investigators or police that you've only
24 had one or two showers with him, and at other times you've
25 testified that you've had a shower every time with him?

1 A Yes.

2 Q Well, which is it?

3 A But it was --

4 Q One time or every time?

5 A It wasn't every time.

6 Q And you had a relationship with **Minor** since March of
7 2013, right?

8 A When?

9 Q When you first moved in with --

10 A No, because **Minor** -- well, actually, the first time I
11 met him he was there at the house. I never bathed him or
12 anything. I didn't really know **Minor** at the time.

13 Q Just what -- what time was that? What year was that?

14 A That was 2013. He was with her for about like two
15 weeks before he was taken.

16 Q That's right. He was taken by whom?

17 A You want me to elaborate on that?

18 Q If you want to, sir, I'm opening the door for you.

19 A By DSS.

20 Q Why wouldn't DSS return him to her?

21 A Because of her smacking him in the face for breaking
22 cigarettes.

23 Q It wasn't because they found you violent?

24 A They also didn't want me in the house because me and
25 her had violent interactions. We got in the fight. The one

1 fight. It wasn't due to me. They didn't want her having
2 him because she wasn't taking her medications like she was
3 supposed to. She wasn't doing her classes like she was
4 supposed to as well. And she wasn't -- she really kind of
5 blew off the whole trying to get her son back. But that
6 wasn't the first DSS case as well.

7 Q We'll get to that.

8 A But there's other people that have given testimony,
9 too, know all about that. Enherica (PHONETIC)Butler, Justin
10 Madore, Megan Cody.

11 Q You testified now that on December 29th that -- well,
12 when **Minor** pooped in his Pull-Up what room was he in then?

13 A He didn't poop in his Pull-Up that night. I just
14 clarified that and cleared that up. That initial report, as
15 I've already explained was out of me trying to protect and
16 look out for her so she can't get in trouble for anything.

17 Q So it's not true that **Minor** pooped in his pants?

18 A No, sir.

19 Q And it's not true that you hit him with your hand and
20 he fell into the bathtub?

21 A I already explained that he had pooped in the bathtub
22 and that's why I popped his butt.

23 Q I'm just asking you. Well, why would you pop his butt
24 if he didn't poop?

25 A I just said he pooped in the bathtub.

1 Q And you just told the jury the only reason you did it
2 was because Theia told you to hit him?

3 A Yes, because he had pooped in the bathtub.

4 Q But you've been telling Theia for years don't spank
5 that boy, don't hit that boy, right?

6 A Yes, sir.

7 Q But she says hit him and, well, okay. Is that all it
8 takes to hit him? But you left him in the bathtub alone?

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q Did you see any bruises on him?

11 A I saw bruises on his testicle area.

12 Q Did you tell that to --

13 A Yes, I did.

14 Q Investigator McClurken?

15 A Oh, no. I didn't. I told that to his mother that
16 night.

17 Q You told it to Patrice McArdle?

18 A To his mother.

19 Q To whose?

20 A Minor's mother.

21 Q Oh, you told it to Theia --

22 A His mother. Yes.

23 Q -- that you saw bruises on the testicles. But after
24 the -- after Minor's dead and you're talking to a police
25 officer you don't mention seeing any bruises on him?

1 A No, I didn't. I did explain to him that I did see a
2 bruise on his stomach. From whenever her and Minor had
3 went to Spartanburg that day and I asked her what the bruise
4 was, she said that he fell into the -- into the bed.

5 Q She fell into the what --

6 A That he fell into the bed.

7 Q Fell into the bed?

8 A Yes. At the hotel that they were staying in in
9 Spartanburg.

10 Q Why were they staying in that hotel in Spartanburg?

11 A Because she wasn't supposed to be at the house with me,
12 and I told her that I was tired of her hitting on Minor
13 and calling him racist terms. Like calling him a baboon.

14 Q So you threw her out of the house --

15 A Yes.

16 Q -- that she was paying for?

17 A Yes. We had a no contact order. We weren't supposed
18 to be living together due to the fact of the Spartanburg
19 incident that happened.

20 Q Well, that was nice of you to set her up in that hotel
21 instead of the room she's paying for, right? She took
22 Minor with her, right?

23 A Yes, sir.

24 Q And then at some point Theia came back from her call.
25 Do you know the man that she had seen in Spartanburg? The

1 customer, the client, the John?

2 A I just know him as Papi. That's what she calls him.

3 Q Papi Chulo; is that right?

4 A I'm guessing. I just know him as Papi. I don't know
5 the Chulo part.

6 Q And that's kind of a person she had been seeing for a
7 while, right?

8 A For about a month.

9 Q You didn't have any kind of foreknowledge that they
10 were planning on moving in together?

11 A No, I didn't.

12 Q Is that news to you today?

13 A Yes, sir. It is.

14 Q You told Investigator McClurken a day after -- shortly
15 after **Minor** died that you were the one who woke **Minor** up
16 and put him in the car --

17 A Yes, sir.

18 Q -- before the trip to Newberry?

19 A Yes, sir.

20 Q Is that true?

21 A No, sir. I've already explained my full story about
22 what happened.

23 Q So you were thinking about it so far in advance that
24 you figured that if they knew you were the one who woke the
25 child up and put the child in the seat that that would be

1 incriminating against her?

2 A Yes, sir. Not necessary incriminating, but --

3 Q But you did tell Investigator McClurken at the very
4 beginning that you were the one who woke up Theia while she
5 got cleaned up and you put him in the car? You put Minor
6 in the back of the car?

7 A Yes, sir.

8 Q And the car seat in the Chevy is directly behind the
9 driver?

10 A Yes, sir.

11 Q Who drove?

12 A She drove.

13 Q Theia?

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q Well, I mean, it's kind of hard to hit kids when
16 they're directly behind you in the driver's seat, isn't it?

17 A Not necessarily, if you don't have on a seatbelt and
18 you're not driving.

19 Q So you can -- she was flexible enough that she could at
20 times reach back there and hit him?

21 A Yes.

22 Q Well, where were you sitting during the ride down to
23 Newberry?

24 A In the passenger seat.

25 Q Front passenger seat?

1 A Yes, sir.

2 Q Were you all -- did you sleep on the ride over there,
3 or were you all talking or listening to music or what?

4 A We were bickering back and forth.

5 Q You were fighting with her?

6 A Yes, sir. Going over some stuff that she was still
7 upset about or mad about.

8 Q In fact, you told Investigator McClurken you were
9 trying to use that ride down there to talk her out of quit
10 prostituting herself, right?

11 A Yes, sir.

12 Q That that was a bad lifestyle, unwholesome?

13 A Yes, sir.

14 Q Now, You told Investigator McClurken that she didn't
15 park at the house in Bedenbaugh. That she parked down the
16 street.

17 A No. I said that she parked inside the parking -- or
18 the driveway.

19 Q You didn't say that she parked up the street from the
20 house?

21 A No. I said she parked in the driveway.

22 Q So that the man couldn't see -- the man in the house
23 wouldn't be able to see the car?

24 A No.

25 Q You didn't tell Investigator McClurken?

1 A I said that she parked in the driveway.

2 Q When Theia went in the house you said that you and

3 Minor were in the car?

4 A Yes, sir.

5 Q You noticed Minor stopped breathing a couple of times

6 while Theia was in the home?

7 A Only once.

8 Q The actual answer is only once?

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q But you told Investigator McClurken right after the

11 death that he had stopped breathing several times; is that

12 correct?

13 A Yes, sir.

14 Q And you said you awoke him and the boy said

15 everything's fine?

16 A Yes, sir. He said uh-huh.

17 Q But even though he said that you started honking the

18 horn several times to get Theia to come out of the home?

19 A I had honked it.

20 Q Well, just out of curiosity, were you in the backseat

21 or the front seat?

22 A I was in the front seat.

23 Q So when you were checking on Minor you were just kind

24 of leaning through the gap between the seats?

25 A Yes, sir.

1 Q You said Theia never came out from the house once she
2 went in?

3 A No, sir. Not until she got done with her call.

4 Q So at that point you went to sleep?

5 A Yes, sir.

6 Q If a child stops sleeping several times why do you go
7 to sleep?

8 A He only stopped once.

9 Q Only he stopped --

10 A Yes.

11 Q -- breathing one time --

12 A Yes.

13 Q -- so you could go to sleep then?

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q Okay. Well, that's a safer situation for him. At some
16 point Theia came outside with the guy and they were talking.
17 Is that true?

18 A Yes, sir.

19 Q Do you know how long they were talking?

20 A I don't recollect.

21 Q Was your car in the driveway or was it down the street?

22 A It was in the driveway.

23 Q Was it parked next to like a camper?

24 A Yes.

25 Q Then you told Investigator, now Chief McClurken, that

1 as you all were driving away -- who drove away, you or
2 Theia?

3 A She drove away.

4 Q The -- and you were in the passenger seat with the
5 black jacket to kind of cover yourself?

6 A Yes, sir. When we got out of the driveway I took the
7 jacket off.

8 Q Why didn't you tell Theia right away that the child was
9 not breathing?

10 A I did.

11 Q Did Theia bring you something called like a Strawberry
12 Rita, or some kind of drink from inside?

13 A No. No, sir.

14 Q Do you know why there's a bag of drinks on the front
15 seat?

16 A No, sir. I don't.

17 Q Were you sitting on them?

18 A No, sir. I just didn't know they were in the car. I
19 seen all those pictures. A lot of the stuff that's that in
20 the car I didn't even know was in the car. From the
21 Strawberry Ritas, to the pistol, to the knife. I didn't
22 know that stuff was even in the car. That's all news to me.
23 I don't even drink like that. She's the one that actually
24 likes the Strawberry Ritas and all that stuff. Not me.

25 Q But you didn't -- you didn't see her with a bag of

1 drinks that she brought back in then, at least, and put in
2 the seat you were sitting in?

3 A She didn't put anything in my seat. I'm thinking that
4 that might have been from when she came from the gas station
5 or whatever, because there was nothing -- no alcoholic
6 beverage that I saw in the car at least when we was going
7 down to Newberry and when we left from Newberry -- trying to
8 leave from Newberry.

9 Q So the Strawberry Ritas, you all had stopped at a gas
10 station and she had bought some Strawberry --

11 A No. She stopped at a gas station when she got the cat.

12 Q When she got what?

13 A The cat.

14 Q A cat?

15 A Yeah.

16 Q I mean, when you all were driving down from Newberry
17 where did she get the Strawberry -- were they at the home
18 and you all brought them down?

19 A I just said I think she brought those with her. They
20 were already in the car when she came back from Spartanburg.

21 Q So she had gotten those in Spartanburg?

22 A I'm guessing. I'm not sure. I had never seen them.

23 Q Was she drinking those while you all were going down
24 the road talking to her?

25 A She didn't drink anything while we were driving down

1 there. I don't know what she did on the way coming back
2 from Spartanburg.

3 Q The first thing you said that you told Theia was does
4 this child have sleep apnea?

5 A I asked her about does he have sleep apnea or anything
6 of the sort, because I explained to her about him having
7 stopped breathing and what not. I told her, I said, "I have
8 sleep apnea myself. I stop breathing in my sleep." So I
9 asked.

10 Q But you hadn't been with that child long enough to know
11 whether that child had sleeping issues or not?

12 A No. I'd never been to the hospital or the doctor's
13 office with him.

14 Q And you said Theia said, "Oh, shit. He doesn't have
15 that problem," and asked you to check on **Minor** Is that what
16 you told the investigator?

17 A No. What she said, no, she doesn't think he has that.
18 And then I started -- she told me to pinch his fingers and
19 whatnot.

20 Q Well, initially you said -- whether it's true or not,
21 initially you told Investigator McClurken she asked you to
22 see if he was awake and okay --

23 A Yes.

24 Q -- and that's what you went back to do?

25 A And she told me to wake him up.

1 Q You said you started shaking Minor's feet
2 extensively.

3 A Yes. I shake his feet. I pinched his fingers.

4 Q The child did not respond?

5 A No, sir.

6 Q And you told that to Minor that the child was not
7 breathing?

8 A You mean Theia?

9 Q Uh-huh.

10 A Yes.

11 Q And you then told Investigator McClurken Theia said,
12 "Calm down. Keep trying."

13 A Yes.

14 Q And you continued to pinch his fingers, push his chest,
15 tickle his feet, smack his cheeks --

16 A Yes, sir.

17 Q -- and shaking him profusely?

18 A Yes, sir. It wasn't like I was beating on him. I was
19 just lightly tapping his cheek trying to get him to respond.
20 She was still in the process of trying to ride back to the
21 house, or towards Laurens County Hospital.

22 Q Do you know how that child's safety seat got on the
23 floor of the backseat?

24 A No. Only thing I can think of, as I already explained
25 to you. The seat -- that carseat has never been put in the

1 carseat correctly. It's never -- it's never been hooked up
2 correctly. It's just been sat in the car.

3 Q So it just fell on the floor when you were initially
4 taking **Minor** to the hospital room?

5 A Yes, or maybe when I picked him up out of the carseat.
6 That's the only thing I can think of.

7 Q You told Theia you know how to do CPR. You told
8 Investigator McClurken you told Theia that you knew how to
9 do CPR. And you didn't know --

10 A Yes, sir.

11 Q -- if you should do it?

12 A Yes, sir.

13 Q Or you might hurt him?

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q You started pushing on **Minor's** chest and brown stuff
16 then started coming out of his mouth and nose.

17 A I pushed on his chest and I had held his nose, and I
18 did the whole full CPR.

19 Q You said at that point Theia then turned on the dome
20 light inside the car, turned around and looked at **Minor**
21 and she say the brown stuff coming out and said, "We've got
22 to get to the hospital".

23 A She said, "Oh, shit. We need to get to a hospital."

24 Q So that part is true, or that's just what you told
25 Investigator McClurken?

1 A That's true.

2 Q And then you told Investigator McClurken you all went
3 -- got to the hospital and you took Minor inside while
4 Theia parked the car?

5 A Yes, sir.

6 Q And at that point the ER staff took Minor from you?

7 A Yes, sir.

8 Q At some point they came back and told you there was
9 nothing more they could do for Minor that he was dead?

10 A They couldn't bring him back, yes.

11 Q And then you told Investigator McClurken that both you
12 and Theia started to cry?

13 A Yes, sir.

14 Q Investigator McClurken asked you what about all the
15 bruises that Minor had on his body; is that correct?

16 A Yes, sir.

17 Q And where they came from?

18 A Yes, sir.

19 Q You told Investigator McClurken, immediately after
20 Minor's death, that you only saw one bruise on Minor's
21 side.

22 A Yes, sir.

23 Q And that you has asked Theia about that?

24 A Yes, sir.

25 Q And then you told Investigator McClurken that Theia

1 probably did it to Minor

2 A Yes, sir. That was the very same bruise that I just
3 explained that I saw whenever they were staying at the hotel
4 in Spartanburg and I asked her about it and she said that he
5 fell into the bed.

6 Q And then you told Investigator McClurken that you've
7 seen spank the child in the past?

8 A Yes, sir.

9 Q Well, how is that protecting Theia, if you're interest
10 in being dishonest then was to protect Theia, how is saying
11 that she was spanking the child protecting Theia?

12 A Spanking is a whole lot different than beating.

13 Q But your thinking was a whole lot different then.
14 Investigator McClurken asked you about the severe injury to
15 the child's stomach and head and he asked you how these
16 occurred; is that correct?

17 A Yes, sir.

18 Q You said Theia's very strong and that she's given you a
19 black eye in the past?

20 A Yes, sir.

21 Q The -- how big were you back in the -- well, let me
22 finish what I was asking you and then I'll ask you that.
23 How big were you back in December of 2014?

24 A I think I was like 205.

25 Q 205 pounds?

1 A Yes, sir.

2 Q Is it possible maybe you said you were 209 pounds at
3 that time?

4 A Between 205 and 209. Yes, sir.

5 Q And, in fact, you told the officers at some point that
6 you usually cooked yourself two meals a day; is that
7 correct?

8 A Say that one more time?

9 Q You don't remember telling them that sometimes you had
10 two lunches a day to keep yourself big?

11 A No, I never said I ate two lunches a day to keep myself
12 big. I said I might make a snack or something like make a
13 sandwich, but I didn't make two lunches a day to keep myself
14 big.

15 Q Do you cook sandwiches?

16 A Yes, sir. I put them on the -- not Louis Armstrong,
17 but that guy with the grill.

18 Q Is that a fair and accurate depiction of what you
19 looked like in September of 2014?

20 A Yes, sir.

21 Q That's you standing next to Theia?

22 A Yes, sir.

23 Q And you're a little bit bigger than she is, aren't you?

24 A No, not bigger than her. She was at 250 before we got
25 arrested.

1 Q You weren't a strong enough guy to keep a woman from
2 beating you up?

3 A I really don't try to hit women like that. I really
4 try not to.

5 Q Just have the misfortune of being arrested six or seven
6 times for fight with -- because you were the victim each
7 time?

8 A Say that one more time?

9 Q Every time you were arrested it was Theia's fault? She
10 was the instigator of the fights?

11 A Yes, sir.

12 Q And you are a combat vet, 210 pound former soldier.

13 A Not 210. 209 and 205.

14 Q 209, sorry.

15 A Yeah.

16 Q Investigator McClurken told you how series the injuries
17 were to **Minor** but you told him you didn't have any
18 explanation for any injuries?

19 A No, sir.

20 Q You said that **Minor** was fine and awake at the
21 residence before you put him in the back of the car to put
22 him in Newberry, didn't you?

23 A Yes, sir.

24 Q And then you told Investigator McClurken that Theia had
25 left earlier that day to go to the store, right?

1 A Yes, sir. The gas station. That's when she brought
2 back the cat.

3 Q But actually that was a euphemism for her going to see
4 a customer?

5 A No. No. She actually did go to the store, which was
6 the gas station, and she brought that cat. The very same
7 cat that's inside the motion discovery the Solicitor just
8 showed me.

9 Q Now, Investigator McClurken asked you why you took the
10 child's shirt off, right?

11 A Yes, sir.

12 Q Do you remember what you told him?

13 A No, I don't remember.

14 Q Did you tell him that you wanted to clean Minor up
15 before you took him inside the hospital?

16 A Yes, sir.

17 Q Why?

18 A To get the stuff off him while I was giving him CPR.

19 Q Because that would offend the hospital staff to see
20 throw up on the child?

21 A No. There was still throw up on him when I was trying
22 to give him CPR still.

23 Q And you told Investigator McClurken you just didn't
24 want all that shit on him, right?

25 A No, sir.

1 Q And you said you're 100 percent sure that you did not
2 cause any injuries to Minor

3 A Yes, sir.

4 Q In fact, the only injury you were even aware of was the
5 injury to Minor's side?

6 A Yes, sir.

7 Q The Investigator McClurken asked you about whether you
8 had taken Minor's clothes off so he could bathe himself
9 earlier that night, right?

10 A Yes, sir.

11 Q And Investigator McClurken asked you if you had seen
12 the injuries to the groin, penis, crotch area?

13 A Yes, sir.

14 Q You said, "I don't look at Minor's naked body."

15 A Yes, sir.

16 Q Is that true or is that not true?

17 A Do I look at his naked body? Is that what you asked
18 me?

19 Q Yes.

20 A No, I don't. Not like that.

21 Q But you just told the jury you looked at his naked body
22 in the bathtub today and saw the penis?

23 A I said I saw his genitals, and I don't sit there and
24 look at him.

25 Q That's not looking at his naked body?

1 A Okay. How can I define looking at his naked body so
2 that it's clear to the jury.

3 Q Well, any way you want to.

4 A I don't look at it like that. But whenever I did go in
5 and check on him, yes, I did see his genitals and whatnot
6 and I saw the bruising on him. Like if you walked into a
7 room and saw somebody standing there naked. You wouldn't
8 see them.

9 Q You said you don't look at his naked body because --
10 you don't look at people like that because you had been
11 abused as a child yourself?

12 A Yes, sir.

13 Q By your father and your sister?

14 A I didn't say my father.

15 Q You didn't say your father?

16 A No.

17 Q You said, "I don't want to be labeled a pedophile?"

18 A Yes, sir.

19 Q Now, I don't know the answer to this question. But how
20 can you be an escort if you don't look at peoples' naked
21 bodies? I'll assume there's some degree of nudity involved
22 in being a prostitute or an escort.

23 A Yes, sir. There is.

24 Q Do you not look at the customers' naked bodies?

25 A There's a difference between a 40 some odd year old man

1 and a two-year-old boy. I'm hoping you'll understand that.

2 Q I do understand that.

3 A Okay.

4 Q Investigator McClurken asked you about the manner that

5 **Minor** had struck his head when you had spanked him

6 earlier, right?

7 A Yes, sir.

8 Q He was following up on that?

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q And then that's when the agent brought you a doll to

11 show -- kind of recreate --

12 A Yes, sir.

13 Q You said that **Minor** had only fallen down two or three

14 seconds and he got up fine?

15 A Yes, sir.

16 Q And then you performed a demonstration for them about

17 what you had done in the car?

18 A Yes, sir.

19 Q And this was videotaped?

20 A Yes, sir. I believe it was. I'm not sure.

21 Q And again, you told him that you had spanked him

22 because **Minor** had soiled himself?

23 A Yes, sir.

24 Q And at that time that you spanked him when he defected

25 in the tub you still had not seen any injury to the penis

1 area?

2 A I did see injury to the penis area. I stated that
3 earlier when the Solicitor asked me a question.

4 Q Well, today for the first time you're saying that you
5 did actually look at his penis area and see the bruises?

6 A Yes, sir.

7 Q And you said that you had Minor pull his Pull-Ups
8 down after he soiled himself?

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q And then you spanked him?

11 A Yes, sir.

12 Q And then you made Minor pull his soiled Pull-Ups back
13 on himself?

14 A That's what I said.

15 Q Is that true?

16 A No, sir. I already explained he didn't have on the
17 Pull-Ups. He was in the bathtub. I'm not sure if you were
18 listening to the testimony earlier when I was talking to the
19 Solicitor or not.

20 Q I just want to make sure it's clear. Did you get
21 defense when you were with the Investigator?

22 A When he responded or referred to Ms. McArdle as in
23 whoring around, and another statement she said, yes, I did
24 get kind of a little offended.

25 Q You said that they were trying to make you laugh,

1 didn't you?

2 A I don't remember saying that.

3 Q You told Investigator McClurken he was trying to make
4 you laugh. Is that true or not?

5 A I don't remember making any statement.

6 Q You deny that you ever caused any injuries to Minor
7 and that you never saw any bruises on Minor except for the
8 one on his side?

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q And that occurred in the past when she was at the motel
11 in Spartanburg?

12 A Yes, sir.

13 Q At that time he put you under arrest. Is that fair to
14 say?

15 A Yes, sir.

16 Q And you've been in jail ever since on --

17 A Yes, sir.

18 Q -- on this homicide charge?

19 A Yes, sir.

20 Q You actually got a murder charge on you, too, don't you
21 for this same incident?

22 A Murder charge?

23 Q Has that one been dismissed or are you still --

24 A What murder charge?

25 Q Were you indicated for murder?

1 A No.

2 Q Just homicide by child abuse?

3 A Yeah. Were do you get this murder from?

4 Q I might be wrong. I might be wrong.

5 A Yeah.

6 Q You're not aware of any other charges other than
7 homicide by child abuse?

8 A No.

9 Q That's not a really good charge to have on you though,
10 is it?

11 A No, sir. It's not.

12 Q In fact, you were even helpful enough to write a
13 statement for the police, weren't you?

14 A I didn't write a statement. I gave a verbal statement.

15 Q You gave an oral statement?

16 A Yes, sir.

17 Q You also, in addition to Investigator, now Chief,
18 McClurken, you were also interviewed by Nikki Cantrell with
19 SLED?

20 A Yes, sir.

21 Q And that was the date that **Minor** died?

22 A Yes, sir.

23 Q Was that conducted at the same time you were with --

24 A Yes, sir.

25 Q -- Investigator McClurken? You told the SLED Agent

1 that you had been with Theia and her son Minor since March
2 2013?

3 A Yes, sir.

4 Q First met her in Asheville?

5 A Yes, sir.

6 Q You've been with her since you moved to Spartanburg in
7 August of 2014?

8 A Yes, sir.

9 Q Was this -- was Agent Cantrell with you while
10 Investigator McClurken was with you?

11 A Yes, sir. They were both --

12 Q So the two of them were asking you questions?

13 A Yes, sir. They were both present.

14 Q Where were you when you spoke to the -- at the hospital
15 or in the police station?

16 A At the police station.

17 Q And they asked you about the evening of December -- or
18 the day of December 29th?

19 A Yes, sir.

20 Q And you said that you woke up around 9:00 and fed the
21 child breakfast?

22 A Yes, sir.

23 Q At some point Theia went to the Valero gas station and
24 Walmart in Laurens County. Is that true?

25 A No. She went to a Valero gas station in Spartanburg

1 County.

2 Q Did you tell the investigator that she went to the
3 Walmart in Laurens County?

4 A That was the day prior, yes.

5 Q Well, they were asking you about December 29th, weren't
6 they?

7 A Yes, sir. But I was also telling them about the day
8 prior to the 12th.

9 Q You told the agent, the SLED agent, that you gave
10 **Minor** a bath about 10:30 at night because the child had a
11 bowel movement on himself?

12 A Yes, sir.

13 Q You agree that that's what you told the agent?

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q You gave the child a bath, and then you put the child
16 to bed?

17 A Yes, sir.

18 Q And then after that bath is when Theia came home with
19 the cat that she had found at Valero?

20 A Yes. That's what I told the agent.

21 Q Is that true that she had found the cat at the gas
22 station and brought it home?

23 A Yes, sir.

24 Q So that portion of your statement is true?

25 A Yes, sir.

1 Q And not too much incrimination about bringing a cat
2 home?

3 A No, sir.

4 Q And then when she came home, that's when she told you
5 that she had a call to go to Newberry, right?

6 A No. She told me that after she left again with the
7 cat. Or she dropped the cat off and then she left again.

8 Q And then when she came back from that call is when she
9 told you --

10 A Yes, sir.

11 Q -- she had to go to Newberry? She asked you to go
12 because --

13 A She felt uneasy about it. She'd never been to Newberry
14 before, and she felt as if it might have been a setup with
15 the police or something.

16 Q And you actually said that **Minor** slept the whole way
17 in the backseat, right?

18 A Yes, sir.

19 Q And that you sat in the front passenger seat and Theia
20 drove?

21 A Yes, sir.

22 Q When you got to the location a man came outside and
23 spoke to both of you?

24 A No. He spoke to her.

25 Q So if you said them, either the agent misheard you or

1 you misspoke?

2 A I'm not sure. I said he spoke to her, not me. I don't
3 even know the guy.

4 Q You told the agent that when the child was having
5 trouble breathing you started honking the horn for Theia to
6 come out of the home?

7 A Yes, sir.

8 Q Now, did the car horn work on that vehicle?

9 A Yes, sir. It did.

10 Q It's an old used car, right?

11 A Hmm?

12 Q It was a fairly used cheap car, right?

13 A No. It was a 2005 Malibu.

14 Q Okay. The -- how loud did that horn peep?

15 A Just like any car horn.

16 Q Is it -- I mean, some are like little beepers and some
17 are big heavy horns. Which one is that?

18 A It's like a regular car horn. A big heavy beep would
19 be like a truck or, you know, a semi.

20 Q So did you honk it horn or did you just do like quick
21 hits on it?

22 A I did quick hits on it like two, three times.

23 Q Do you feel like you pressed that horn loud enough for
24 Theia to have heard you and come out?

25 A Yes.

1 Q There's no point in pressing the horn unless it's loud
2 enough for somebody to hear you, right?

3 A I guess. I don't know what was going on inside.

4 Q Neither Theia nor the man with her came out of the
5 home?

6 A No, sir.

7 Q Now, did you all leave the headlights on the car while
8 Theia was in the driveway or would you all have turned those
9 off?

10 A Those were off.

11 Q And then you told the agent, after **Minor** was
12 unresponsive, that you started pressing his stomach and
13 pinching his toes; is that right?

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q You said the only injuries you saw on him that you had
16 seen was a bruise on the right side and a scratch on his
17 neck that had been given to him by the cat?

18 A Yes, sir.

19 Q Now, was there a scratch on **Minor's** neck?

20 A Yes, sir.

21 Q Was that a cat scratch? Is that a true statement or
22 are you covering for Theia?

23 A That's a cat scratch.

24 Q So the scratch on **Minor** would have been by one of the
25 cats?

1 A Yes, sir.

2 Q Did the cats have names?

3 A Yes, they did. I don't remember them off the top of my
4 head. I think the long-haired one was like Metalia or some
5 -- some craziness. I don't remember.

6 Q You were unable to give the agent any timeframes that
7 night, weren't you?

8 A Yes, sir.

9 Q And you told her that your phone was broken?

10 A Yes, sir, it is. Or -- yeah, it still is.

11 Q But you did come clean and tell the agent that you and
12 Theia were both escorts. Is that fair?

13 A Yes, sir.

14 Q Are you sure -- while Theia is in the home with the man
15 in Newberry were you sitting in the front passenger seat or
16 sitting in the back seat?

17 A In the front seat. I moved to the backseat when I
18 started to try to get him to respond.

19 Q Were you listening to music or just doing what?

20 A I was sleeping. I didn't have a phone to listen to
21 music. She took her phone inside.

22 Q Did the car have a car radio?

23 A Yes, but I didn't have the keys at the time.

24 Q Oh, she took the keys?

25 A Yeah.

1 Q But you told Agent Cantrell that you -- before you
2 pulled into the driveway that you crawled between the seats
3 to get in the backseat so the man wouldn't see you in the
4 car and get scared, right?

5 A Yes, I did.

6 Q But that's untrue?

7 A Yes, sir.

8 Q Why is your jacket in the backseat?

9 A Because when I crawled back there to give CPR and
10 everything and check on Minor I did take off my jacket.
11 Actually, I didn't even have on a jacket that night,
12 honestly. I had on my hoodie. The very same one that's in
13 evidence.

14 Q You didn't have on that big black puffy jacket?

15 A That's her jacket. That's a woman's jacket. That's
16 the very same jacket I just verified was hers in that
17 picture an hour ago when the Solicitor was talking to me.

18 Q Now, you didn't tell the agent -- you did tell the
19 agent, but it's false, that you stayed in the backseat the
20 whole time that she was with --

21 A Yes, sir.

22 Q But you could still hear the child behind you having
23 breathing problems?

24 A I woke up due to a noise outside. And I'm not deaf.
25 So yes, I can hear.

1 Q So it wasn't **Minor** -- a sound **Minor** made? It was a
2 sound in the neighborhood?

3 A Yes, sir.

4 Q And that's what made you check on the child?

5 A That what made me wake up. And then I noticed I didn't
6 hear him snoring back there, so I checked on him.

7 Q And you had mentioned earlier that Theia had gone to
8 Spartanburg to meet a Hispanic man for services, right?

9 A I'm guessing that.

10 Q And you told -- you admitted to the agent that you had
11 smacked **Minor's** butt hard with your hand causing the child
12 to fall forward on his head in the tub, right?

13 A Yes, sir.

14 Q I'm not 100 percent sure. Is that -- are you saying
15 that that is true now or are you saying that's not true to
16 protect Theia?

17 A The very same smack that I said that I did earlier,
18 whenever his head hit the bathtub. You were in here when I
19 told the Solicitor that.

20 Q Well, you've got it down kind of to just a little push,
21 don't you?

22 A No. I said I patted his butt.

23 Q You patted his butt. You -- when you told the agent,
24 the SLED agent, that if **Minor** had a bruise on his butt
25 or head it was probably from you hitting him?

1 A Yes, sir.

2 Q Was that true?

3 A No, sir.

4 Q That was said just to protect Theia?

5 A Yes, sir. The SLED even admitted that his head hitting
6 the bathtub wouldn't have been hard enough to cause any
7 damage to his head.

8 Q And then you told the agent, "I never saw a bruise,
9 even though I was filling the tub with water, and I told
10 **Minor** to take the bath and then go to bed."

11 A Yes, sir.

12 Q You told the agent, **Minor's** not retarded. He's
13 grown. He can bathe himself. Is that fair?

14 A Yes, sir. Because the agent asked why I wasn't bathing
15 him and why his mother didn't bathe him. We actually taught
16 him to bathe himself.

17 Q You told the agent you normally shower with **Minor**
18 every morning.

19 A Yes, sir. That's not true though.

20 Q That would be an untrue statement that you gave him?

21 A Yes, sir.

22 Q And later on I think you'll say that you only had one
23 or two showers with that child in your life, right?

24 A I stated that like earlier when you asked me that
25 question.

1 Q Then the -- at that point the officer showed you
2 pictures of Minor's body.

3 A Yes, sir.

4 Q And you said you've never seen those bruises?

5 A Besides the one --

6 Q That they were new to you?

7 A Besides the one on his side, yes.

8 Q And you, again, told him because you had been abused
9 physically and sexually at a child that you don't even look
10 at Minor in that area?

11 A Yes, sir.

12 Q Is that true or is that another lie?

13 A I really don't like that. But when I saw him get in
14 the bathtub, yes, I did notice that.

15 Q And that you've never even washed him in that area as
16 well?

17 A No, I don't wash him in that area. He washes himself.

18 Q If you don't look at it, you can't wash him in that
19 area, right?

20 A He bathes himself.

21 Q And then you said several weeks ago that you saw Theia
22 strike Minor on the butt with her hand and he hit his head
23 on a coffee table?

24 A I said on the back of his head. Not his butt.

25 Q Where was that?

1 A That was inside the house.

2 Q Is that a true a statement or is that another --

3 A That's a true statement.

4 Q So the one about Theia hitting him several weeks on the
5 butt is a true statement?

6 A Yes, sir.

7 Q And you're saying that the child hit his head on the
8 coffee table?

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q Now, this coffee table that we're talking about, that
11 was the coffee table that was in the master bedroom?

12 A Yes, sir. We had just gotten a new TV like after Black
13 Friday. That coffee table hasn't always been in there.

14 Q Is that the coffee table that --

15 A Yes.

16 Q So that's what caused the -- that's what you said the
17 child fell into, or was knocked into?

18 A Yes, sir.

19 Q Did it knock that 50 inch TV off the stand?

20 A I did just state we didn't always have that 50 inch as
21 well, sir. We just got it at the Black Friday. You can
22 actually verify that.

23 Q I will.

24 A Make sure.

25 Q How did you get that TV? I'm curious now. How did --

1 A She had put it on layaway.

2 Q So she paid for it on layaway?

3 A Yes, sir.

4 Q Is there anything wrong about that?

5 A What do you mean by is there anything wrong about that?

6 Q I mean, why -- I don't know. I mean, you said it like
7 that's suspicious. But is there anything wrong with her
8 putting the TV on layaway?

9 A I didn't say anything about it being suspicious. You
10 said how did she pay for it. I said she bought it on
11 layaway.

12 Q Okay. And, in fact, all three of you watched that TV
13 in the house, didn't you? You watched -- you played movies
14 for the child and you watched it and she watched right,
15 right?

16 A Yes, sir.

17 Q That was the only TV set in the house, right?

18 A Yes, sir.

19 Q And then you also did a recreation -- or a recreation
20 of the events of that day. And you did a recreation for
21 SLED of what you did which was videotaped?

22 A Yes, sir.

23 Q So no more statements to law enforcement between
24 December 30th and then a little over two weeks ago?

25 A Yes, sir. They can't talk to you if you don't have a

1 lawyer once you request a lawyer, correct?

2 Q That is the law. You've got that precisely.

3 A That's good.

4 Q So you didn't reach out to talk to them until -- were
5 you aware that you were on trial notice this week?

6 A I was told that there was a trial for this week and the
7 Solicitor asked me if I wanted to testify. That's about it.

8 Q And you, at this point, just wanted to get the truth
9 out?

10 A Yes, sir.

11 Q Not about getting Richard out?

12 A Yes, sir. As I've already said, if I'm still charged
13 after this, I'll take the charge, sir.

14 Q You're willing to take a child abuse --

15 A If I'm still charged with --

16 Q -- homicide by child abuse charge?

17 A If I'm still charged after this, which whatever the
18 outcome of this is, I'll take the charge, sir.

19 Q So you're willing to take a homicide by charge abuse
20 charge even if Theia is found guilty just on the principal
21 of it, because you're saying you never hurt that child,
22 right?

23 A Yes, sir.

24 Q Why would you in the world want to plead guilty to
25 homicide by child abuse if you never touched the child?

1 A What I'm saying to you, sir, if I'm still charged with
2 a charge --

3 Q That's right.

4 A -- whatever the charge may be, whether it's homicide by
5 child abuse, whether it's whatever, I will still take the
6 charge, sir.

7 Q So you're willing to plead guilty to homicide by child
8 abuse?

9 A If that's the case. If people find me guilty for not
10 informing DSS, whatever the case may be, yes, I will.

11 Q If people find me guilty of it.

12 A Yes, sir.

13 Q So if the next jury finds you guilty of it you're
14 willing to take --

15 A Yes.

16 Q -- the consequences of it?

17 A Yes, sir.

18 Q You don't think it might help you out a smidgen if
19 Theia is the one who's found guilty? You don't think that
20 you all will introduced that as evidence at your next trial?

21 A I don't know, sir. I'm not an attorney. All I know is
22 that I just stated I'll take the charge if it's deemed fit
23 that I take the charge.

24 Q But you've had two attorneys. They didn't recommend to
25 you that maybe that might be a good strategy for you?

1 A No. In fact, I had Mr. Pierre for like, I guess, three
2 or four months and I fired him because he wasn't coming and
3 talking to me enough about anything.

4 Q He wasn't working hard enough for you so you got a new
5 one, right?

6 A He wasn't talking to me. Informing me what was going
7 on.

8 Q You gave a audio recorded interview with the law
9 enforcement, with some members of the Solicitors and
10 prosecutors staff a little over -- I mid March, right?
11 Sometime in the last two or three weeks you spoke to the
12 prosecution? Some members of their office, at least?

13 A March 10th, yes.

14 Q Was that here in Newberry or was that -- where was that
15 located?

16 A That was here in Newberry.

17 Q Was it here in the courthouse or was it at the jail or
18 --

19 A It was here at the courthouse.

20 Q And your lawyer was present?

21 A Yes, sir. He was.

22 Q I have a taken the liberty of transcribing the audio.
23 So can I ask you a few questions about that interview?

24 A Yes, sir.

25 Q Now, you had kind of a meeting with several prosecutors

1 and investigators. Is that fair to say?

2 A Just two.

3 Q And it was you and your attorney were present?

4 A Yes, sir.

5 Q About halfway down the page where it says DS, the
6 prosecutor, or the person you spoke to said, "So that would
7 have been on the 27th."

8 A I see where you're talking about.

9 Q I'm going to ask the question that they asked you, and
10 can you -- RB would be your initials?

11 A Yes, sir.

12 Q Would you be kind enough to read your reply?

13 A I will.

14 Q "So that would have been on the 27th?"

15 A "Yes, sir."

16 Q "You saw her do it?"

17 A "Yes, sir. She slapped his head into the coffee
18 table."

19 Q Now, what date incident are we talking that you said
20 you saw Theia slap the child and he hit the coffee table?

21 A The 27th.

22 Q The 27th?

23 A Yes, sir.

24 Q Now, that's very similar to your story about hitting
25 the child and falling into the bathtub. Is that a true

1 statement or were you trying to protect her, or implicate
2 her?

3 A What are you talking about? Whenever his head hit the
4 coffee table?

5 Q You're saying that's a true statement?

6 A Which one? This one or the one that I got about --

7 Q That the child hit his head on the coffee table.

8 A It's a true statement.

9 Q Did that actually happen?

10 A Yes, sir.

11 Q Were there bruises from that?

12 A I believe there was a light bruise right there. But
13 we've always speculated because he always had a mark
14 underneath his eye. There's a prior thing in North Carolina
15 with them questioning about the bruise under his eye.

16 Q You're aware, from living with the child since
17 Asheville, that the child has what are called Mongolian
18 spots? Are you familiar with that term?

19 A No. And I wasn't told about that. They said that with
20 DSS or whatever up there when he was taken.

21 Q But is that just stuff you learned from reading all of
22 the reports and evidence in this case?

23 A Mongolian spots. What do you -- what do you mean by me
24 learning --

25 Q My question is were you -- are you aware of whether the

1 child had a condition called Mongolian spots?

2 A No. She had told me about that from whenever she dealt
3 with DSS in North Carolina.

4 Q So you are aware? It's an easy question. Were you
5 aware or were you not aware that the child had a skin
6 condition called Mongolian spots?

7 A Yes, but I'm unsure of what that is exactly.

8 Q So that could be some kind of disease to anything? You
9 have no idea what that actually is?

10 A I'm not sure what it is.

11 Q But the name has stuck with you, that you've been aware
12 of it for a while but just haven't bothered to find out what
13 that was, right?

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q Then your last statement on that page three, RB, it
16 says, "We had got into an argument." Read that statement.

17 A "We had got into an argument. Instead of her taking
18 her anger out on me she got mad at **Minor** because she
19 wasn't putting on his shoes correctly, and ended up hitting
20 him."

21 Q Is that the incident on the 27th we're talking about?

22 A Yes, sir.

23 Q And on the top of the next page, read your statement.

24 A "She slapped him like grown -- she slapped as in like
25 as grown woman would slap a grown man inappropriately

1 touching her."

2 Q Could that be like a grown ass woman?

3 A No.

4 Q You haven't heard that phrase before?

5 A Yes, I've heard of grown ass woman, but I didn't say
6 grown ass woman.

7 Q And down to the prosecutor -- or the investigator
8 asking, "In the back of the head?" And what's your answer?

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q Then three lines down from that, "Then what did -- did
11 the baby start crying?"

12 A Yes, sir.

13 Q And that would have been two days before?

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q Go on.

16 A "But that day we'd already been in an argument two days
17 prior. We were still bickering over small stuff. I woke up
18 that morning. I started cleaning the house up and
19 everything."

20 Q So your -- what time did you wake up on -- are you
21 talking about the 27th or the 29th?

22 A The 27th.

23 Q So it was your job to clean the home?

24 A It wasn't my job. I just did it, because I don't live
25 in filth, or I try not to at least.

1 Q So you kept the home tidy while she worked
2 prostituting?

3 A For the most part.

4 Q Was the house in good condition?

5 A On the day that everything happened?

6 Q Okay. The --

7 A I was asking were you asking about on the day that
8 everything happened.

9 Q Well, yes, sir.

10 A Not necessarily. We still had clothes we had to get
11 washed and we had trash we still needed to take out.

12 Q What time did you wake up?

13 A I woke up probably around 7:30. If I remember, around
14 7:30 or 8:00. I started cleaning house.

15 Q So that's what you do at 7:30 in the morning? You just
16 immediately wake up and start cleaning up?

17 A I clean dishes and I pick up stuff in the house. I
18 change the cat liter. I feed the cats. Take a bath myself.
19 I'll either use her phone to check my Facebook and text
20 people on Facebook or sit in the bathtub and watch --

21 Q Well, under that the investigator says, "You didn't
22 clean very much." Your answer?

23 A I said, "Well."

24 Q "I've seen the inside of that house."

25 A Yes, sir.

1 Q So you were cleaning that morning?

2 A Yes, sir. I was cleaning dishes at least.

3 Q Okay.

4 A "And so, from there I started making breakfast and
5 everything for myself and Minor Me and Minor were
6 playing with some of his toys."

7 Q So after you cleaned up the house then you get Minor
8 up and you start feeding breakfast for him and you?

9 A He normally wakes up on his own. But yes, I'll fix
10 breakfast for him and myself.

11 Q Okay. And he asked you, "What did you make for
12 breakfast?"

13 A "I got him some yogurt and I started cooking eggs and
14 stuff, making some cereal for him and myself."

15 Q So he ate yogurt and cereal?

16 A Yes, sir.

17 Q Okay. Go on.

18 A "And then me and him was playing with his toys and
19 whatnot. He went in there with his pellet gun and shot as
20 his mom while she was asleep. She woke up and struck him."

21 Q A pellet gun?

22 A Yes. It was a pellet gun like a cap gun.

23 Q Was it the little gun that was found in the car?

24 A Yes, sir.

25 Q I thought you told us you've never seen that gun in

1 your life? Not -- less than an hour ago you said --

2 A You said the pistol that was in her car.

3 Q Right.

4 A If you -- she has a -- or that's not a -- that's a
5 pistol.

6 Q Yeah, but it's --

7 A The little toy gun is a red gun. That's not the same
8 gun. And that gun is inside the car. It's a real gun. Why
9 would you let a two-year-old play with a real gun.

10 Q But I asked you was that the gun in the car and you
11 said yes. That's incorrect?

12 A Yes, that's incorrect. I thought you were saying the
13 gun -- the little toy gun was found in the car.

14 Q So that's another little red gun --

15 A Yeah. It's a little pellet cap gun that's inside the
16 house, or it should still be in the house.

17 Q Have you seen all the photographs that SLED took of the
18 home?

19 A Not every single one of them.

20 Q Have you seen any photographs of any red guns in that
21 home?

22 A If I hadn't seen the pictures, I can't really say.

23 Q And the investigator says, "Go on. Okay, go on."

24 A "It didn't shoot BBs. It just made a really loud
25 noise. It was like pow, pow, pow."

1 Q Okay. Now, you were making kitchen -- breakfast in the
2 kitchen?

3 A Yes, sir.

4 Q Now, the kitchen's not connected -- there is a door
5 into the master bedroom, right?

6 A Yes, sir.

7 Q You can't see the bed from the kitchen, can you?

8 A No, sir.

9 Q How would you see Theia slap the boy or hit the boy if
10 you were in the kitchen?

11 A Because I went in there.

12 Q Why did you go into the bedroom?

13 A Because it was funny. He shot the gun and it was funny
14 for her to get scared. Because when she initially bought
15 the gun she didn't know it made noise like that. So when
16 you open it on Christmas he actually shot it off. It scared
17 her. And she was like, "I made a mistake on getting this
18 for him."

19 Q So you both snuck in together, is what you meant to
20 say, to scare her awake?

21 A Yes, sir.

22 Q Did you tell anybody that prior to day?

23 A No, sir. That's --

24 Q That's fresh news for everybody today, right?

25 A That's inside of here.

1 Q Well, you didn't say that you snuck in the room with
2 her to scare her, too, did you?

3 A I didn't scare her. He shot the gun at her.

4 Q The investigator says, "Oh."

5 A "I guess it's just a cap gun, I guess. But she got mad
6 at him for waking her up so she struck him that morning."

7 Q "Where did he hit her?" Where did she hit him?"

8 A "She hit him in the stomach."

9 Q "Show me how she did that?"

10 A Do you want me to show you?

11 Q I want you to read the answer that you gave the
12 investigator.

13 A "She woke up like swinging her fist lazy like, I guess,
14 a punch and hit him in the stomach that morning."

15 Q What did you mean, "Her fist lazy like, I guess, a
16 punch"?

17 A When she woke up she just did this (indicating). One
18 of these numbers.

19 Q Well, you told us earlier that she hit him hard enough
20 to knock him on the ground and he was crying. Is that not
21 true?

22 A Yes.

23 Q Which one's true?

24 A Both statements are true. You can still wake up and --

25 Q She hit him lazy like or she hit him hard like you said

1 earlier?

2 A This is a two-year-old child we're talking about. Not
3 a grown man.

4 Q I'm well aware he's a dead three-year-old boy. Just me
5 on that.

6 A Well, I'm just trying to clear this up for you so you
7 understand the age.

8 Q The prosecutor -- or the investigator says, "You saw
9 this happen?"

10 A "Yes, sir. I had told her to just chill out and go
11 back to sleep. It wasn't that big of a deal. And I went
12 back to finish cleaning the dishes."

13 Q I thought you said this was -- you were making
14 breakfast? You were cleaning the dishes after breakfast?

15 A Yes.

16 Q On the next page a little slightly more down -- halfway
17 down the investigator says, "Okay." Do you see that?

18 A Yes, sir.

19 Q All right. It says, "Around that time."

20 A Okay. "You told her to just go back to sleep and you
21 continued cooking." Which --

22 Q No. The investigator says, "Okay" and you said,
23 "Around that time."

24 A I see. "Around that time we were still cleaning dishes
25 when she finally woke up around like 11:00, I guess, I

1 believe. We went back in there and was watching TV and
2 everything. I had took a shower that morning myself."

3 Q What was the baby doing during this time?

4 A During that time we went to the bathroom and needed to
5 get ready to start taking a shower. I finished taking my
6 shower. I got out of the shower. He took off his clothes
7 and he jumped in the shower while I was in the shower."

8 Q But I thought you said that you don't -- that you only
9 showered once or twice in your life with the child?

10 A I got out of the shower as my statement stated. When
11 you shower with a person you stay in there with him.

12 Q "He jumped in the shower while I was in the shower."
13 Is that not what you told the investigator just two and a
14 half weeks ago?

15 A Yes. And it also states, "I got out of the shower. He
16 took off his clothes and jumped in the shower while I was in
17 the shower."

18 Q In fact, he said, "Okay. But you would take showers
19 with him in the morning times?"

20 A "Not always. I did it like once or twice."

21 Q But this morning you took a shower with him is what
22 your statement says.

23 A Yeah, I didn't mean to say that. I didn't actually
24 take a shower with him that morning. I was actually taking
25 my clothes off. I was already in the shower. He was coming

1 in to get in the shower with me. I got out of the shower.

2 Q About four lines down from that the investigator says,
3 "Now you're backing off of that statement and you're telling
4 me that he went in the shower, watched you take a shower,
5 waited for you to get out and then he took his clothes off
6 and got in." Your answer?

7 A "No, he didn't wait for me to get out of the shower.
8 He had already took off his clothes and was coming in the
9 shower while I was in the shower."

10 Q How long do your showers take?

11 A I normally sit in the shower or take a bath for like
12 two or three hours. That's just me. Because I normally --

13 Q You take a shower for two or three hours?

14 A Yeah. I sit in the bathtub and watch movies on the
15 computer that was in the house.

16 Q Were you taking a bath or you were taking a shower?

17 A I was taking a shower that morning.

18 Q And this mobile home's got a -- basically that's how
19 you eat up the morning is sitting in the bathtub or in the
20 shower for two or three hours? Is that true?

21 A Sometimes.

22 Q And, in fact, I think when you all got in that fight
23 back in Asheville you were taking a long bath, too, right?

24 A I actually had just gotten off of work that day.

25 Q This morning, how long was your shower?

1 A Like 20, 30 minutes before he came in there.

2 Q And the baby is sitting in the bathroom the whole time?

3 A No. He came into the bathroom when I was actually
4 getting ready to finish up. He started taking off his
5 clothes to get in the shower with me. I took with me -- I
6 took and I got out of the shower while he was naked. He got
7 in the shower while I was starting to -- getting -- in the
8 shower and I started getting on my clothes and everything.

9 Q "What did you notice about him when he took his clothes
10 off?"

11 A "I had already -- I just know the same bruise that I'd
12 seen on him before. Like the bruise that I saw whenever I
13 came to the hotel room which was -- I forget which day.
14 Long story short, we'd gotten into an argument a week or
15 two, I guess, before she disappeared with him. Went to a
16 hotel in Spartanburg County. It's off New Cut Road. I
17 forget the name of it off the top of my head. She went
18 there. When I finally got there I noticed the bruise on him
19 whenever he was in the bathroom. I was like where did this
20 come from? She was like, oh, he fell into -- into the bed
21 on the bed while he was in -- was at the hotel."

22 Q Okay. I'm asking you this question. Was that the
23 hotel that she had let -- that her mother had paid for her
24 when she moved out from you?

25 A Whenever she left, yes.

1 Q And you went there and got her back, right?

2 A I didn't go there. She came back to the house with a
3 client to come pick me up because she called me like the
4 very same day saying she missed me and wanted me to come
5 back -- or come to the hotel with her and whatnot. She
6 didn't want to argue about stuff. So --

7 Q So she voluntarily came back to the house?

8 A Yes, she did actually. She came with -- I forget the
9 name of the black individual that she came back to the house
10 in his car. He brought her to the house. And I got in the
11 car with him, while **Minor** was in the backseat, and then I went
12 back to the hotel.

13 Q When she went to the motel did she take her Malibu --
14 the red Malibu with her?

15 A She didn't have the Malibu at the time. She had a
16 Nissan Sentra.

17 Q And that's not the car that somebody had disabled by
18 pulling out the spark plugs?

19 A That was the car that she disabled.

20 Q She disabled --

21 A Yes.

22 Q -- and had somehow locked -- somehow lost the keys
23 where it kept it locked up?

24 A The keys were inside the house that I showed her when
25 she came back to the house. I said, "The keys are right

1 here by the bed."

2 Q And it's not really clear to me again. I'm going to go
3 back. How did you all get that car back from Laurens to
4 Spartanburg?

5 A It was still there to be driven.

6 Q But then it was driven back and then somebody re-pulled
7 the plugs out of them? It was good enough to get from
8 Laurens to Spartanburg, but then died there and never came
9 back on?

10 A The car wasn't -- because the spark plugs were hooked
11 back up. I'm trying to remember exactly what was wrong with
12 it. I know we had took it to -- we had took it to -- well,
13 there was a guy that actually came to look at the car. I
14 forget off the top of my head what he said was wrong with
15 it. Something about something. Either the timing was off
16 or something because of the spark plugs being yanked off or
17 whatnot. And when the timing gets off it's not going to
18 start and crank right. I don't know if you know anything
19 about cars and whatnot.

20 Q Just out of curiosity, what was your MOS in the
21 military?

22 A I was a mechanic.

23 Q A mechanic?

24 A Yes, sir. I worked on diesel vehicles.

25 Q And this was a car?

1 A Yes, sir. I've never worked on a civilian car before.

2 I've worked on military vehicles.

3 Q But the military vehicles are substantially different
4 engines and models than the civilian cars?

5 A Actually they are.

6 Q I guess like the Humvee? Are you talking about the
7 Humvee?

8 A Yeah, Humvee, forklift. The bigger -- the bigger
9 vehicles. I've never worked on a regular vehicle.

10 Q So if I joined the Army and became a mechanic I would
11 have no job skills as a car mechanic in the civilian world?

12 A As a mechanic out of the military I still have to go to
13 a regular school to get my certification to become a regular
14 mechanic.

15 Q But it wasn't good enough to figure out how to get the
16 spark plugs back in?

17 A She put the spark plugs back in.

18 Q And you couldn't put spark plugs back in?

19 A I don't know. If I haven't looked at the specs on that
20 car I wouldn't know how to.

21 Q So how long had that car been dead at the side of the
22 mobile home?

23 A That car had been dead for like two or three days. It
24 was actually --

25 Q Are you sure it wasn't longer?

1 A Yes, I'm quite sure.

2 Q So you all only gave it two or three days to try to fix
3 it before her mother had to buy her a new car?

4 A Her mother didn't buy her that new car.

5 Q Where did she get it?

6 A She actually ended up doing that herself at
7 Spartanburg. She sold herself and get the money for it.

8 Q Okay. On the very first line of that page the
9 investigator says, "All right. That was the only thing you
10 noticed about him when he took his clothes off?" And he's
11 referring to the bruise on his hip that you said you saw
12 from two days before at the hotel?

13 A Yes. That's the only bruise I noticed. But I wasn't
14 really paying attention like that.

15 Q And the investigator says, "Left side --" a little bit
16 further down there. He asked you, "Left side?"

17 A "If I remember correctly, it was over here. If I
18 remember correctly."

19 Q And about halfway down the investigator says, "And he,
20 **Minor** was taking a shower by himself. Did you have to
21 help him?" Your answer? "I didn't normally --"

22 A "I didn't normally help him. I explained to her, I
23 said that I really didn't feel comfortable giving him or
24 helping him take a bath like that, because there is too many
25 cases in Asheville with people being hit with child

1 molestation charges and whatnot, and that's not my thing."

2 Q So you didn't want to help Minor take a bath because
3 too many people in Asheville get hit with child molestation
4 charges?

5 A Yes, sir.

6 Q Is that true, or is that your belief, or was that just
7 --

8 A That's actually true. Quite of her friends up there
9 have child molestation charges. There's a guy named ET -- I
10 think his name is like Richard something and has child
11 molestation charges. My baby mother's brother has child
12 molestation charges.

13 Q So the safe practice is not to give kids baths?

14 A I don't want any confusion.

15 Q That's fine. The investigator says, "But didn't you
16 say in the interviews that you helped him with baths before?
17 You did a lot of -- I mean, you helped?"

18 A "Yeah, I helped whenever I helped him teach to take --
19 yeah, I helped whenever I helped teach him to take a bath.
20 After that I didn't do it anymore. She was in there with
21 him at that time. I never did it after that. I showed him
22 how to take it while she was in there helping me, and after
23 that I never helped him take a shower or bath again. He
24 normally sat in there and took his own bath by himself."

25 Q All right. Go on.

1 A "He got in the bath or in the shower. I got out."

2 Q Was it -- which was it, a bath or a shower?

3 A "Shower. I got out. Went about my business still
4 trying to clean up, feeding the cats, putting for -- food
5 out for the cats. Taking out the kitty litter and all that
6 stuff. And I finally decided to get her up and wake her
7 up."

8 Q So you had gotten up at 7:30?

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q And again, are we still on the 27th?

11 A Yes, sir.

12 Q And you had cleaned the -- you had started -- woke up,
13 started cleaning?

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q Then when Minor got up you fed him?

16 A Yes, sir.

17 Q Then you took to your duties of feeding the cats?

18 A Yes, sir.

19 Q Had the cats, by the way, been sleeping in that room
20 that night or were they --

21 A They had been sleeping in that room at night, yes.

22 Q So it's not just when you all leave you put the cats in
23 that room, it's all the time, or it's just --

24 A She wanted them in there while we slept so they didn't
25 run around and jump on our face.

1 Q And then the investigator says -- it's his second
2 statement down there, "And then she finally got out of bed
3 about what time?"

4 A That I cannot recall off the top of my head.

5 Q "But you said she got up at 11:00, then the shower
6 happened."

7 A Yeah.

8 Q Okay. So you could remember what time. Is it true
9 that she woke up at 11:00 on the 27th?

10 A Around 11:00. Yes, sir.

11 Q But you couldn't remember that two weeks ago?

12 A No, sir.

13 Q Okay. The -- go down to where the investigator says,
14 "All right. Then what?" "After that."

15 A "After that we still continued to bicker and argue over
16 just piddley dumb stuff. Trying to remember what we did
17 throughout that day. We sat up and watched movies for most
18 of the day off the computer. I do remember that much. I
19 ended up making lunch, cooking for myself, her and **Minor**

20 Q What did you all eat?

21 A That I don't remember off the top of my head. I think
22 it was some type of soup or something and grilled cheese, I
23 think.

24 Q Go on.

25 A "After that I was cleaning up and I heard him start

1 crying again. I didn't really ask what was going on. I
2 didn't know what happened. Didn't ask what happened. I
3 just heard him crying."

4 Q Well, I thought you just told us that you saw her hit
5 him again? Is this true or is that --

6 A This is true.

7 Q And the investigator asked you again where.

8 A "Inside the room with his mom."

9 Q "The bedroom. The one that you and Theia use?"

10 A "Yes."

11 Q "What time was that?"

12 A "Could be around like 2:00 or 3:00, I believe." After
13 that I said, "I stayed in there still cleaning up trying to
14 fix up the house. As you said, it was a complete mess."

15 Q Man, you're doing a lot of cleaning for very little
16 results.

17 A I do the cleaning. She messes up.

18 Q Go down to where you said "He had slept." You're
19 talking about **Minor** had slept in his room.

20 A "**Minor** slept in the livingroom."

21 Q Go ahead.

22 A I just read the --

23 Q "He actually had a room at one point."

24 A "**Minor** slept in the livingroom." That's what you're
25 talking about, right?

1 Q Go a line in the middle of the page.

2 A Oh, my bad.

3 Q "He had slept in his room."

4 A "He slept in his room. He actually had a room at one
5 point where the cats were. Then she moved him out of there
6 to sleep in the livingroom."

7 Q So he was sleeping in the room with cats at one point?

8 A No. The cats weren't in there at that point. The cats
9 were running around in everything. She got upset with the
10 cats running in there in our room and whatnot and messing
11 around when she went to sleep. So she put them Minor's
12 room and moved him out into the livingroom.

13 Q "About 2:00 or 3:00 you hear him crying. What do you
14 do after that?"

15 A "I minded my business. I didn't get into it. I left
16 it alone."

17 Q I thought you told us that you had been telling her to
18 leave -- you never -- you're testifying that you never stood
19 up for him or investigated when he was crying?

20 A Yes, I did stand up for him. I would tell her that she
21 needed to try other methods by not hitting him. But at that
22 point in time I did not get into it.

23 Q But then you told the prosecutor, "As I said, I
24 continued to clean, cook and whatnot."

25 A Yes, sir.

1 Q And the investigator says, "You're cooking again?"

2 A "Yeah, cleaning and cooking pretty much. I ate a lot."

3 Q You're cooking at 2:00 to 3:00?

4 A I was making something for myself to eat.

5 Q You had already eaten eggs and everything for
6 breakfast, then you had a grilled cheese sandwich for lunch
7 and you're eating again at 2:00?

8 A Yeah. I ate a lot before I came into jail. I was like
9 209.

10 Q And what were you eating them?

11 A Another sandwich.

12 Q Is that true that you had cooked yourself, I guess,
13 what the Hobbits call a second lunch?

14 A It was a sandwich. I wouldn't define that as a second
15 lunch.

16 Q You said you were cooking it?

17 A Yeah, I put it on the George Foreman.

18 Q All right. And then the investigator says, "All right.
19 Then what?"

20 A "After that I think around 4:00 or 5:00 she said she
21 had to go out to Spartanburg to do that whole ordeal and I
22 told her I wasn't going because I really didn't want to be
23 around her because I was kind of irritated with her. Didn't
24 really want to be dealing with her and whatnot."

25 Q When you say "Go do that whole deal"?

- 1 A Her --
- 2 Q Prostitution?
- 3 A Yeah.
- 4 Q So you stay at home with **Minor**
- 5 A Yes, sir. Yeah. Around -- she made dinner around 5:00
- 6 or 6:00, I believe, that day.
- 7 Q I thought you said she -- so it was between 4:00 and
- 8 5:00 or it was between 4:00 and 5:00 that she was gone?
- 9 A She didn't leave until like 7:00 or 8:00 that night.
- 10 Q You said four or five minutes ago -- you said 4:00 to
- 11 5:00 a minute ago?
- 12 A I said she got her call at 5:00 -- 4:00 or 5:00.
- 13 Q Got a call?
- 14 A She didn't leave until like 8:00.
- 15 Q And then third line from the bottom, "Okay. And what
- 16 was for supper that night?"
- 17 A "She made steak, mashed potatoes and bread."
- 18 Q Now, I thought you told us earlier that you were the
- 19 one who cooked dinner that night for **Minor**
- 20 A No, she did.
- 21 Q And the investigator says, "All right. Wait a minute.
- 22 Let's see where his statement -- what does he say in his
- 23 statement where she went to Spartanburg." The -- and then
- 24 on the next page where it says, "RB. At night, yes." Go
- 25 ahead and start right there.

1 A "At night she asked -- cause I remember she came back
2 before she went there. She went to the Valero, I think.
3 Was off and brought another cat home, the one that had one
4 eye, saying that she saw it outside the gas station. She
5 had brought it back to the house."

6 Q So we're talking about the night of the 29th?

7 A Yes, sir.

8 Q And you're telling the investigators then that she had
9 gone to the Valero. That's a gas station?

10 A Yes, sir.

11 Q And how far would the Valero be from your home?

12 A I'm guessing it's like one or two miles away from our
13 house.

14 Q Not too far away?

15 A Not too far away.

16 Q Go down five lines from that and the investigator says,
17 "All right. Here we go. You said they ate -- you all ate
18 dinner. And what was the dinner again you all ate?"

19 A "Steak, mashed potatoes and bread. That's what we had
20 that day."

21 Q "Steak, bread and corn is what you said before."

22 A "It's mashed potatoes. I remember mashed potatoes."

23 Q The bottom line, the investigator says, "She said you
24 all ate steak, bread and corn in your first interview and
25 you said bread and corn." Your line's on the next page.

1 A "We didn't have corn. I don't remember corn. I
2 remember mashed potatoes that night because I know she knows
3 how to make her mashed potatoes."

4 Q Did you help clean up the vomit from Minor that
5 night?

6 A Yes, sir.

7 Q You don't remember seeing pieces of corn on any of the
8 articles of clothing or blankets?

9 A It's been over a year. I don't remember really what
10 was inside the vomit, sir.

11 Q And the investigators say, "She wrote down the part
12 about the corn. I think he says it, too, though." Your
13 answer?

14 A "We might have had corn, but I really don't remember.
15 But I think I remember mashed potatoes as much at that."

16 Q Six lines down the investigator says, "Tell me what --
17 what you all -- after you all ate and before she went." "He
18 ended up," about halfway in the middle of the page.

19 A "He ended up throwing up and pooping on himself before
20 she left."

21 Q "How was he eating that night?"

22 A "What do you mean by how was he eating?"

23 Q "I mean, was he -- how was he acting before dinner or
24 during dinner?"

25 A "I remember at one point he said something about owe

1 about his wiener or something, and I'm like, hey, you talk
2 to your mom about that. I didn't want to ask him anything
3 else about that."

4 Q So now for the first time you're saying that the child
5 was complaining about pain in his wiener?

6 A I stated that earlier when --

7 Q Who had you told that earlier to?

8 A The Solicitor when he questioned me earlier I mentioned
9 that.

10 Q Did you tell law enforcement prior to --

11 A No, sir. I didn't.

12 Q So that was the first time that you brought up the
13 child saying he had pain in his wiener?

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q And that's after you had a chance to go over the case
16 entirely with your lawyer. In fact, you all were -- you
17 were given trial notice, weren't you?

18 A I was told that we had trial -- I was given two trial
19 notices. One for March and another one for April.

20 Q So you've been on trial -- you've had trial notices for
21 a while, right?

22 A Not for a while. Just two other ones.

23 Q And you're aware that this child had major injuries in
24 his groin, penis area?

25 A I didn't see any of the pictures until like I got Mr.

1 Brown. Mr. Pierre didn't even show me the pictures. And I
2 didn't see the pictures until we came here that day for --

3 Q But when you saw those pictures you decided that you'd
4 better address those injuries, right?

5 A The very same day?

6 Q They were a lot more serious looking than you were
7 thinking, right?

8 A I didn't even know about the injuries to that severity,
9 no, honestly.

10 Q So this boy comes to you and he says, "Owe, my wiener,"
11 --

12 A Yes.

13 Q -- "and you say, hey, talk to your mom about that." Is
14 that -- I mean, I didn't really ask him anything about that.
15 Is that really what happened?

16 A Yes, sir.

17 Q And you cared for Minor

18 A Yes, I did. But at the same time let me ask you a
19 question. I'll just rephrase it. If you had a child
20 yourself would you want some other girl or man looking at
21 your child's penis?

22 Q If my child was in pain, probably. But let's go on.
23 I'll try to be fair to you. But, I mean, I understand that
24 they charge people in Asheville for child molestation, so I
25 don't want to get you in trouble. The third line from the

1 bottom. "Okay. So did he have a good appetite to your
2 recollection that night?" And your last line on that page,
3 "I do remember."

4 A "I do remember he ended up throwing up because he was
5 trying to hold stuff down."

6 Q "After he ate?"

7 A "Yeah, after he ate."

8 Q "Where did he throw up?"

9 A "He threw up in our bed."

10 Q Now, my question to you is, how much throw up? Was it
11 like a cereal bowl full, a small cup full, just a little
12 bit?

13 A I didn't really measure it at the time.

14 Q Well, I mean, was it a lot of like would fill a cereal
15 bowl or was it just a little bit of like hacking type throw
16 up, or was it continuous throw up?

17 A It wasn't continuous like him just sitting there dry
18 heaving.

19 Q Were the sheets or bedspreads stained on the bed? Did
20 it leave stains on the bed?

21 A I don't remember. I cleaned up. Wiped the stuff up.
22 That's why there's stuff on the clothes and everything.

23 Q So you did wipe up where he threw up?

24 A Yes, sir.

25 Q And the investigators says, "What was he doing in your

1 all's bed?"

2 A "He was eating in there with us watching a movie."

3 Q "So you all eat in the bed?"

4 A "Yeah."

5 Q "So he ate and then he began throwing up?"

6 A "He puked up a little bit."

7 Q Two lines down from that. "So doing dinner is when
8 he's throwing up and pooping. Tell us about what he said
9 about his groin."

10 A "He said owe."

11 Q "What made him say that?"

12 A I don't know."

13 Q "He was just eating and he was saying owe?"

14 A "He didn't say it while we were eating. He said that
15 earlier throughout the day while we were watching our movie.
16 He didn't mention it."

17 Q So he was complaining about his groin while you were
18 watching a movie after he -- after dinner?

19 A No. It was before. Earlier, before.

20 Q Did you watch the movie before dinner or after movie --
21 after --

22 A We watched a movie before dinner and we wanted one
23 while we were eating dinner. He had complained about it
24 before we had ate dinner that night.

25 Q And the investigator says, "What time was that." And

1 your answer was, "We were watching --"

2 A "We were watching -- and he probably -- after I had
3 made my sandwich and all."

4 Q Which sandwich?

5 A The second one that I made myself.

6 Q So again you had grilled yourself two sandwiches that
7 day?

8 A I had one for at lunchtime and one other one
9 afterwards.

10 Q And the investigator says, "So around 2:00?"

11 A "Yeah. I remember him mention it. He was like owe and
12 he grabbed himself, and I was like, hey, you need to go talk
13 to your mom about that. I don't know anything about that."

14 Q Okay. Well, I'm asking you now. He -- **Minor**
15 according to your story, is complaining about pain to his
16 penis --

17 A Yes, sir.

18 Q -- at 2:00 in the afternoon?

19 A Yes, sir.

20 Q Did he have any head injuries that you saw at that
21 time? Any bruises on his face or head?

22 A Besides the one that was there on his eye.

23 Q Under his eye he had something, but nothing else that
24 you saw?

25 A Yeah. He had a scratch on his neck.

1 Q And this is -- this is just me asking. What was

2 **Minor** wearing at that time?

3 A I don't remember off the top of my head, sir.

4 Q Was it warm in the home or was it cold in the home?

5 A I don't even remember that off the top of my head, sir.

6 Q What did -- what would **Minor** normally wear during the
7 day? Was he in preschool at this point?

8 A She didn't even have him in school at this point.

9 Q Well, he was two-years-old. Just about to turn -- he
10 died the day he turned three, right?

11 A Yes, sir.

12 Q So he wasn't yet in preschool or kindergarten. I'm
13 just curious what a child that age wears during the day.

14 A Whatever he was put on. And --

15 Q Did you dress him?

16 A I didn't always dress him or help dress him. His
17 mother picked out stuff for him to wear at the time.

18 Q Could he have been wearing a shirt that said Coogi,
19 C-o-o-g-i?

20 A I don't know, sir.

21 Q Could he have been wearing a shirt that said Puma?

22 A He was wearing a Puma shirt when we came to Newberry
23 that night.

24 Q Was that a shirt that he had slept in or was that a
25 shirt that you had changed him into?

1 A No. It was a shirt that I changed him into whenever we
2 came to Newberry.

3 Q That was the shirt that you had changed him into?

4 A Yes, sir.

5 Q Did he have a coat or anything over that shirt?

6 A I don't remember that night, sir.

7 Q When he sleeps what does Minor wear? Does he wear
8 overnight diapers or diapers when he sleeps at night?

9 A He wears diapers, yes.

10 Q Does he wear pajama bottoms underneath those diapers or
11 --

12 A No. He normally wears the clothes that he was wearing
13 that day when he goes to sleep.

14 Q Start from your -- the investigator says, "So around
15 2:00?" Your answer is the last two lines.

16 A "Yes. I informed him that he needed to go talk to --"

17 Q No. It says, "Yeah, I remember mentioning that." "I
18 remember him mentioning that." It's the last two lines on
19 that page, right where the investigator says, "So around
20 2:00."

21 A So around 2:00. Hold on.

22 Q I think it's the line you just read before. "He was
23 like owe and he grabbed himself, and I was like, hey, you
24 need to go talk to your mom about that. I don't know
25 nothing about that -- or I don't know anything about that."

1 A "Yeah. I remember him mentioning that. He was like
2 owe and he grabbed himself. And I was like, hey, you need
3 to go talk to your mom about that. I don't know anything
4 about that."

5 Q And on the next page the investigator asked you, "How
6 long you had known Minor and he says -- about halfway
7 down that page, "Four or five months I guess you had known
8 him?"

9 A "Yes, sir."

10 Q And then the investigator says, "That's kind of what I
11 thought about you, too. Why, when he was complaining about
12 his crotch you didn't kind of ask him what's going on?"
13 Your answer?

14 A "Well, I didn't feel comfortable doing that, I mean."

15 Q "Why?"

16 A "I molested as a kid and hopefully that's not going to
17 be coming out in court. But when I went through my own
18 stuff as a child, that's the reason why certain stuff I
19 didn't do. I was molested by my sister as a child. So, I
20 mean, certain things I won't get into like that."

21 Q And is that the reason why you didn't look at naked
22 children?

23 A Yes, sir.

24 Q Even when you were bathing with them?

25 A Yes, sir.

1 Q Bottom line. "Okay. So you all are eating and he's
2 just kind of vomiting and pooping on himself?"

3 A Yeah.

4 Q "And what happens then?"

5 A "I tell him to get up and we go get him changed. While
6 I go get him changed and whatnot and help him -- or clean up
7 and whatnot, she spanked him because he pooped on himself.
8 He'd thrown up and whatnot. I'm like chill out. Just wash
9 the sheets. It's not like we don't have clothes to wash him
10 with. So she's still -- and everything and that led into
11 the argument of, well, you're still talking to Heather.
12 You're still doing this, you're still doing that, and I'm
13 like this has nothing to do with anything. Why are we
14 arguing over something that's stupid right now."

15 Q So it was the sheets that had been stained?

16 A I'm guessing so, sir.

17 Q You're saying you told Theia that it was -- that we can
18 just wash out the sheets?

19 A I was saying that we could just wash the vomit or
20 whatever that was on the sheets. It's not that big of a
21 deal.

22 Q Are we talking about a garment or are we talking about
23 sheets?

24 A Sheets.

25 Q And then two lines down from that the investigator

1 says, "But how was he acting though? He sounds pretty ill
2 if you lose control and all that." Your answer?

3 A "He started to try to eat food again. I was like,
4 Minor let's clean up and whatnot. His mom put it to him
5 like he needs to actually finish his food and whatnot. But
6 during the process of us still bickering I'm cleaning up
7 from where he puked up everything, trying to take his plate
8 from him and whatnot. And I was going to set it aside for
9 him if he was hungry later on."

10 Q Is that true, that you and Theia had been arguing that
11 day?

12 A We'd been arguing several days.

13 Q Part of it was about you were talking to at least a
14 woman named Heather?

15 A A friend of mine named Heather. And it was also along
16 other things as well.

17 Q And this was about a week since the time that she had
18 moved out and moved to the hotel?

19 A It had been going on since before then.

20 Q Okay. Then the investigator, in the middle of the
21 page, says, "Okay. And then you take him to the bathroom?"
22 And your answer was, "Yeah, and we clean up."

23 A "Yeah, and we clean up and whatnot. I did -- I myself
24 did actually get sick that night, too. I actually threw up
25 in the toilet." That's supposed to be toilet.

1 Q Well, read your answer and then you can --

2 A Threw up in the bathtub. Not the bathtub, but the
3 toilet myself.

4 Q And you testified that the vomit -- the photograph of
5 the vomit in the toilet is actually yours?

6 A Yes, sir.

7 Q And that is the bathroom that you were cleaning **Minor**
8 -- which bathroom did you clean **Minor** up in?

9 A The very same one that had the vomit in it. He was
10 cleaned up in the bathtub.

11 Q I'm kind of curious now because the master bedroom has
12 a bathroom in it, doesn't it?

13 A Yes, sir. It does.

14 Q The -- you have to walk all the way across the other
15 side of the house to get to the other bathroom?

16 A Yes, sir.

17 Q Why would you use that bathroom?

18 A She wanted us using the other bathroom because she
19 wanted the big bathroom that had the big tub in it to
20 herself.

21 Q The child has -- I assume he had thrown up on himself,
22 too?

23 A Yes, sir.

24 Q Where was he stained?

25 A What do you mean about where was he stained?

1 Q Well, you said you cleaned him up. Did you just have
2 to wipe off his clothes or did you take the shirt off and
3 wipe off his chest?

4 A No. He just had a little bit on his shirt.

5 Q So that's all? You didn't take any clothes off? You
6 just wiped off his shirt?

7 A Yes, sir.

8 Q Now, was there a cold going on around, or do you know
9 what caused you to get sick? Was it food sickness or do you
10 think like you caught the flu or a stomach bug?

11 A I'm not sure. I'm not sure. I didn't have a fever or
12 anything or get a flu bug either, fever and diarrhea and
13 everything.

14 Q I'm just curious what made you throw up like that.

15 A I'm not sure.

16 Q Had you been sick the day before?

17 A No.

18 Q So this was just something that snuck up on you that
19 same day?

20 A I'm guessing.

21 Q The investigator's last paragraph on that page he says,
22 "Here's the thing that's confusing. I understand you had
23 some issues happen when you were a child, but you've
24 showered with this child before and you've helped him bathe
25 before. In fact, you were just about to tell me about

1 bathing the poop off of him. So how come sometimes you're
2 comfortable with him and other times you're not?"

3 A "I get him into the bathtub. I don't -- I don't never
4 actually sit there watching him. I'll come in there and
5 check on him and be like, Minor are you in there. Are
6 you done. He'll say okay. And I'll say I'm about to come
7 in and check and see. I'll look in there and see if he's
8 got everything on. If you look like you still got some on
9 you, make sure you get that off. There's only like -- been
10 like one or two times I've actually sat and bathed with
11 him."

12 Q "Tell me about this time. Whenever you went in there
13 to wash the poop off of him."

14 A I told him that he's got poop on him and he got the
15 rest of the poop off, and popped his butt and his head
16 banged off the toilet, or whatever."

17 Q I thought you just told us today he didn't actually
18 poop on himself?

19 A He did poop on himself in the bathtub.

20 Q In the -- was this while you're cleaning him up from
21 the --

22 A No. While he was taking a bath. I said that earlier,
23 too. He pooped in the bathtub.

24 Q So before dinner or -- because you said he threw up at
25 dinnertime, right?

- 1 A Yes, sir.
- 2 Q So before dinner you had given him a bath?
- 3 A No, after dinner.
- 4 Q So the child --
- 5 A When he threw up. I took him in there to take a bath.
- 6 Q The child throws up during dinner?
- 7 A Yes, sir.
- 8 Q You take him to the bathroom, clean him up?
- 9 A Yes, sir.
- 10 Q And then later that night is when you give him the
- 11 bath?
- 12 A No. The very same time while cleaning him up he takes
- 13 a bath.
- 14 Q Well, you just told us you just wiped his shirt off.
- 15 A Yeah, I wiped his shirt off to clean him up. You said
- 16 did he throw up on himself at all. I said no, I cleaned off
- 17 his shirt. I took him in there to take both though still.
- 18 Q Well, did you help him take his shirt off?
- 19 A Whenever he got to the bathroom?
- 20 Q Have you ever seen a two-year-old, three-year-old boy
- 21 take his own shirt off before?
- 22 A Yes. He's actually taken his own shirt off before.
- 23 Q So he's proficient at that?
- 24 A Yes.
- 25 Q He gets it over his head and everything without having

1 to have a parent help him?

2 A Yes, sir. He has.

3 Q So you do strip him down naked, or he strips himself
4 down naked?

5 A I help him strip himself down naked while he's in
6 there.

7 Q Okay. So you should have been able to see the injuries
8 to his groin, right?

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q And now today you're saying that you did see them?

11 A Yes, sir.

12 Q Have you ever told anybody that before?

13 A Before today?

14 Q Yes, sir.

15 A The lieutenants that was there.

16 Q The investigator says, "He was sick, wasn't he, and you
17 were sick, too?"

18 A Yeah, but the tub or toilet was right there. But it
19 wasn't really hard. It wasn't nothing that was like --
20 cause our bathtub is made out of plastic and his head like
21 mainly from right here to the bathtub."

22 Q So at this point your admission -- your initial
23 admission to Chief McClurken where you had given him a hard
24 hit on the butt is now just a blow that's not detrimental to
25 his health?

1 A A hard pat and still hitting a plastic tub would still
2 not be detrimental to your health.

3 Q "And what did you notice about his naked body then?"

4 A "I did notice that he had like a discoloration on his
5 butt, but --"

6 Q "Tell me about his groin."

7 A "I didn't look at his groin."

8 Q But you're saying that's untrue?

9 A I did say he had discoloration on his testicles.

10 Q Is that not -- am I missing something? Is that not the
11 groin?

12 A Yes, sir. It is.

13 Q The testicles aren't the groin?

14 A Yes, they are.

15 Q Are you saying it is -- when you told the investigator
16 just two weeks ago or so, I didn't look at his groin, is
17 that true or not true?

18 A It is true. And I did inform the investigator as well
19 that I did see the discoloration on his testicles and his
20 penis, if you've actually read all this.

21 Q So in your mind groin and penis are two different --
22 and testicles are different things?

23 A No, they're not different things.

24 Q Well, the investigator says, "That makes no sense to
25 me. I mean, I've tried to. I want you to explain this to

1 me. You're not doing a good job."

2 A "I'm telling you I saw discoloration on his butt and I
3 saw something in that area but didn't actually sit there and
4 just like try to look at his stuff like that, because after
5 he got back up he got into the bathtub and I went back -- I
6 went back there to the livingroom and whatnot because she
7 was getting ready to leave and she was talking to me and
8 whatnot."

9 Q So your testimony is when you took him back into the
10 bathtub that is when Theia was leaving?

11 A At that point in time, yes.

12 Q And the boy is still able to bathe himself at that
13 point?

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q He's not in pain when he's in the bathtub?

16 A I didn't notice at that point in time he was in pain.
17 He didn't look like he was in pain when I left him.

18 Q So he's got these injuries, you're saying, to his groin
19 at that point and he doesn't wince or complain when he sits
20 down in that hot water in that bathtub?

21 A It wasn't hot hot. It was like lukewarm. And he
22 didn't wince or anything from what I saw.

23 Q Was **Minor** a pretty tough boy or did he kind of
24 complain at kind of small injures?

25 A It depends, I guess, at times.

1 Q And the investigator says, "Where are those pictures
2 we've got? Do we have them printed out?"

3 A "I seen those pictures. Me and him have been over the
4 pictures."

5 Q By me and him who are you talking about?

6 A Me and my attorney.

7 Q So you had seen all these photographs that the
8 prosecutors are --

9 A Yes. A few days before we came over here.

10 Q Well, this is obviously back in March. March 10th.

11 A Yes, sir.

12 Q The investigator says, "How did you miss that?"

13 A I said, "I seen some of the bruises on him but a lot of
14 them looked old, so I didn't really pay any attention to
15 them. I talked to her then -- talked to her then how this
16 happened or how did that happen. Because I pointed out the
17 stuff on his ear one time and she was like, well, I popped
18 him on the ear one time. And I'm like, so why are you
19 hitting him. I said I seen this when I saw the
20 discoloration on his rear end and I guess -- I saw, I guess,
21 you would call it taint or his gootch -- I saw, I guess, you
22 would call it taint or gootch, or whatever it is. The spot
23 between the testicles."

24 Q So -- well one, you're saying that when you saw some
25 bruises on his ears in the past you did stand up to Theia at

1 that time and say why did you hit him?

2 A I asked her what happened there.

3 Q But at other times you wouldn't ask her about that?

4 A I did stand up for him on occasions, but not every
5 time, yes.

6 Q But you're saying when he was in the bathtub -- I'm not
7 real smart about this. But I guess the taint or the gootch
8 would be that area of skin between your testicles and your
9 anus?

10 A Yes, sir.

11 Q And that's where you're saying you saw the
12 discoloration?

13 A Yes, I saw some discoloration there.

14 Q Well, I mean, isn't that attached to his scrotum?

15 A Yes, sir. It is.

16 Q And you didn't notice that they were dark blue at that
17 time, or purple?

18 A Yes.

19 Q You're not telling that to the prosecutors are you?

20 A I did explain that to him. As I said, if you keep
21 reading through it, it's in there.

22 Q All right. Well, we're going to, trust me. The
23 investigator said, "How are you seeing that part without
24 seeing his crotch?

25 A Because he was bent over.

1 Q So when Minor -- why is Minor bending over?

2 A When I patted his butt.

3 Q That's after he pooped and you -- did you tell him to
4 bend over so I can spank you?

5 A I told him to just bend and he bent and I popped his
6 butt.

7 Q Which propelled him into the bathtub?

8 A Yes, sir.

9 Q At the moment that you hit him like that, that's when
10 you noticed the discoloration and the skin area between the
11 anus and the testicles?

12 A I hadn't noticed it before.

13 Q First time you saw it?

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q The investigators says, "I feel like you're trying to."
16 Your answer?

17 A "I'm not trying to cover her. I'm telling you
18 everything I saw. He was bent over."

19 Q And that's true. You're not trying to cover for Theia,
20 are you?

21 A I wasn't.

22 Q You're trying to cover for you?

23 A No, I'm not trying to cover for me. I'm telling you
24 everything that happened.

25 Q The investigator says, "It's impossible to have missed

1 that -- his crotch. I mean, I've never seen anything like
2 that."

3 A "He was bent over at the time."

4 Q "And he's not complained about that?"

5 A "He didn't complain at that time. He did complain
6 earlier at like 2:00 or 3:00 whenever he said ouch. But I
7 never took the time to actually stop and look at his groin.
8 I can show you on here the ones that I've seen. I can show
9 you the ones I believe are from where his head hit off the
10 coffee table, too."

11 Q So at this time you've got these photographs of
12 Minor's body that you're pointing out bruises that you're
13 saying I did see and didn't see?

14 A Yes, sir. They asked me about the ones --

15 Q The investigator says, "What about the bathtub?"

16 A "He didn't have anything on his head from the bathtub.
17 Our bathtub is made out of plastic in the trailer."

18 Q So you're telling the investigator at the time you hit
19 him he didn't have any bruises?

20 A No, sir.

21 Q If he had any bruises, it had to be somebody else.
22 Investigator says, "Okay. So tell me about the bathtub
23 though. What happens after he gets washed off?"

24 A "He gets out of the bathtub and puts on a diaper. Puts
25 on his clothes. He comes out there and I'm like, Minor do

1 you want to watch a movie. He said no, he was tired. I
2 said, do you want to watch a movie or you want to go lay
3 down. He said lay down. He went to go lay down. He was
4 laying down by the time she came and whatnot. She came back
5 with the cat first off and I was like why would you bring
6 another cat. We've got enough cats. Like why are you
7 bringing more animals when we can barely take care of the
8 stuff we have to deal with anyways right now. Well, she
9 left -- but she left that in the house. She ended up going
10 back to Spartanburg County. She well went to go back
11 towards -- heading towards Spartanburg. She was gone, I
12 remember -- I think we left to come to Newberry around 11:00
13 or 12:00, I think, if I remember correctly."

14 Q Well, here you're saying that at the time the child was
15 in the bathtub Theia had already gone to the gas station.

16 A Uh-huh.

17 Q So while you're alone with the boy and he's taking a
18 bath Theia has already gone?

19 A He'd gotten out of the bathtub at that point in time.

20 Q Does Minor wear Pull-Ups or diapers?

21 A He wears diapers.

22 Q And diapers have like the two Velcro strips that you
23 can do on the sides to secure?

24 A Yes, sir.

25 Q And this two-year-old boy could put on his own diapers?

1 A He could -- well, you said -- the diaper, the ones with
2 the things on the side, they were Pull-Ups I guess you would
3 call them.

4 Q Well, I'm asking the question. Are they Pull-Ups or
5 diapers?

6 A I'm guessing the ones that you just pull right up are
7 Pull-Ups. Those are Pull-Ups. Yes, he wore Pull-Ups.

8 Q And does Minor just happen to know where they're
9 stored in the house, or how does he get them?

10 A Yes, he knows where they are stored in the house. We
11 actually showed him where we put those diapers in the house.
12 They're underneath the sink in his bathroom.

13 Q So he opens up the sink in his bathroom --

14 A Yes, under the --

15 Q -- pulls his Pull-Up out of the box?

16 A Yes, sir. He learned how to do that, so.

17 Q He's just a fairly self -- all right. End of that
18 page. The investigator says, "Okay. What time do you think
19 she, Theia, got back?"

20 A "I remember she left around 7:00 or 7:00 to go towards
21 the gas station. I guess she went to go get gas, but she
22 was supposed to be heading for Spartanburg. She stopped at
23 the gas station. She brought the cat back. She left again
24 like a couple of minutes after she brought the cat back. So
25 it wasn't that long she was at the house after bringing the

1 cat back she left to go.

2 Q So Theia went to the gas station. She came back for
3 just a few minutes to give you the cat and then she left
4 immediately or shortly thereafter?

5 A Yes, sir.

6 Q So she's gone from 7:00 or 8:00 in the evening until
7 she comes back around 11:00 or 12:00 when you all head to
8 Newberry?

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q Who's with Minor from 7:00 in the evening until 11:00
11 -- until she comes back at 11:00 or so?

12 A Myself.

13 Q Just you?

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q So it's from 8:00 to 12:00, that's four hours. Or from
16 8:00 to 11:00 would be three hours that you were with the
17 child alone?

18 A Yes, sir.

19 Q Any visitors come by?

20 A No, sir.

21 Q Any strange -- nobody strange? No family members? Did
22 you take the child anywhere?

23 A No, sir.

24 Q Well, you couldn't do that because the car was broken,
25 right?

1 A The car -- the other car she had.

2 Q When did she get back from the call?

3 A She got back from the call around 11:00 or 12:00

4 because that's when we sat down. She was like I don't know

5 if I want to go out to Spartanburg or to Newberry. I said I

6 don't know where Newberry is. I've never been out there.

7 She was like, do you think I should go. I'm like I don't

8 know. I was telling her I really don't care what you do.

9 That's your stuff. Because we had been into a big argument
10 over this whole -- her doing.

11 Q Well, I thought you told earlier that you had been
12 trying to get her out of prostitution?

13 A Yeah, I did.

14 Q But at this night you were saying you do what you got
15 to do?

16 A. I told her I don't care what she does. That's on her.
17 I've told her before if she decided to continue to do that,
18 that's on her.

19 Q But she asked your advice on whether she should go or
20 not?

21 A Yes, sir. I told her, I said, if you don't feel
22 comfortable with doing it, don't go. But I don't care what
23 you do.

24 Q And the -- had you ever been to Newberry before?

25 A No, I hadn't.

1 Q Do you know if Theia had ever been to Newberry before?

2 A I don't know.

3 Q What time did you put Minor to bed? Because we know
4 that Theia leaves between 7:00 and 8:00.

5 A Yes, sir.

6 Q What time -- does Minor have a bedtime? Does he put
7 himself to sleep?

8 A Normally?

9 Q Yes, sir.

10 A No. Normally he stays up with us most times. He'll
11 stay up until like 8:00 or 9:00 most times.

12 Q So he's got a general bedtime but not a --

13 A Not a general one.

14 Q Well, I mean, it's just generally between 8:00 and
15 9:00? It's not like at 8:00 you have to go to bed, or 9:00
16 you have to go to bed?

17 A There's no set time.

18 Q And that's when Theia is with you and that's when
19 you're on your own?

20 A Yes, sir.

21 Q Is it just the child just starts getting drowsy and
22 puts himself to bed or did somebody actually take him to
23 bed?

24 A I told him to lay down and he went to go lay down.

25 Q And you rely on a two-year-old just doing that?

1 A I mean, it's not like he had to climb into a bed or
2 anything with the mattress on the floor.

3 Q And then you watch TV in the master bedroom?

4 A And dozed off. Yes, sir.

5 Q Now, when you all sleep does the master bedroom door
6 get closed or do you sleep with the door open?

7 A It gets closed. There's a few times that it stays
8 open, but most of the time it's closed.

9 Q That doesn't get a little bit cold since the heater is
10 in the livingroom and if you close the door it kind of gets
11 cold in the bedroom, particularly on December 30th, doesn't
12 it?

13 A Yes, sir. But I normally have the AC on anyways.

14 Q You didn't run the heat during the winter?

15 A Not really. I leave the AC running.

16 Q In winter?

17 A Yes, sir.

18 Q Okay. And the investigator said, "So how long has she
19 been home before you all go down to Newberry?" And then I
20 think about seven to 10 lines own it starts off -- your
21 answer was --

22 A "How long was she doing that?"

23 Q Your answer was, "We were probably home for like 15 to
24 20 minutes." Do you see that?

25 A "We were probably home for like 15 to 20 minutes trying

1 to debate to come out to Newberry, and the whole time I told
2 her I really don't -- I don't really care what you do. Like
3 it's on you. I've told her -- I've told you from the start
4 I'd like -- I really don't feel comfortable with you doing
5 this. I'd rather you not do this. I don't really want a
6 part in it."

7 Q And then on the -- your first line on the next page.

8 A "I know I had woke him up. He was crying --"

9 Q Stop right there. You just told this jury less than
10 two hours ago she woke up **Minor** She dressed him. She
11 put him in the car. Your statement two and a half weeks ago
12 is that you woke him up.

13 A Yes, sir.

14 Q And your statement to Investigator McClurken was that
15 you put him in the car and dressed him?

16 A Yes, sir.

17 Q Which is the true answer?

18 A She woke him up whenever she came into the house. She
19 was already loud when she came into the house.

20 Q So your answer two and a half weeks ago to their
21 investigator was "I know I had woke him up" is another
22 incorrect or untruthful statement?

23 A What I meant by that is when I came in to get him out
24 of the bed I had actually woke him up. He was already kind
25 of awoke when she came into the house making noise coming

1 back from Spartanburg.

2 Q Keep reading.

3 A "He was crying and complaining, upset and whatnot. I
4 was trying to help him get in the carseat and everything.
5 We get him in the carseat. She's telling him to shut up
6 because she's in a bad mood. Still I'm like chill out.
7 Like don't -- like don't take it out on him."

8 Q "I was trying to help him get in the carseat." So
9 you're saying now that that's not actually correct? Theia
10 was the one putting him in the carseat?

11 A He was in the carseat. I sat him in the carseat. He
12 didn't buckle up. She had turned around and popped him for
13 not buckling up correctly.

14 Q Well, when did you tell us that? I mean, you didn't
15 tell the jury that just within the last two hours.

16 A I had told them --

17 Q It just came to your head a second ago?

18 A No. I did tell the jury that she struck him whenever
19 he didn't buckle up correctly.

20 Q Then the investigator says, "Back up, because you were
21 -- you didn't want to go to Spartanburg earlier and you
22 stayed home. But on this time you said you just go ahead
23 and do whatever you need to do. How do you get from there
24 to riding down with her and brining Minor

25 A "She wanted me to come with her because she didn't feel

1 comfortable coming to -- or coming to Spartanburg -- or not
2 Spartanburg but Newberry. She'd been to that call in
3 Spartanburg before. It was some dude she called Papi, or
4 Papi Chula or some craziness. She'd been -- she'd been
5 seeing him before, so she didn't really feel the need for me
6 to go out there, and I didn't want to go out there."

7 Q And Papi was a guy that she'd been seeing for a while,
8 right?

9 A For like a month, I guess. Yeah.

10 Q And the investigator says, "All right. How did she
11 talk you into coming down here?"

12 A "She said she didn't feel comfortable. She said that
13 she'd like for me to come with her. I tried to stay at home
14 and she was like, well, I've never been to there before. I
15 don't feel comfortable. Something in me. I feel weird
16 about something. If I go down there something might happen.
17 I'm like fine, screw it, I'll go. I really don't want to.
18 But you're going to keep bugging me about it and you're
19 going to keep arguing -- arguing with me about this. So if
20 you want to go, let's get up and let's go. I'd rather stay
21 home and go to sleep. But the only reason why I ever went
22 on any of her calls with her was due to the fact she felt, I
23 guess, scared to go or if it was new for her or whatever the
24 case may be.

25 Q So you agree that you had been on other calls with her

1 before?

2 A A few ones, yes. If it was new for her and she'd never
3 been out there before.

4 Q And that's why you all keep a knife in the car, incase
5 she gets attacked?

6 A I don't know. It's not my knife.

7 Q Well, how do you protect her? How do you propose to
8 protect her if she gets attacked? Just with your fist?

9 A I never really considered that in all honesty.

10 Q So you're going with a prostitute to meet a stranger at
11 night and she asks you to ride with her for safety --

12 A Yes, sir.

13 Q -- and you never considered what you were going to do
14 incase she got jumped?

15 A I never really took it into consideration in all
16 honesty.

17 Q So that's not why the knife was in the car?

18 A It wasn't my knife. My knife got taken back in
19 Spartanburg during an incident that happened there. So
20 that's the only knife that I had.

21 Q You knew how to use that knife then, didn't you?

22 A It never got used.

23 Q You didn't cut up a guy named Michael Brown?

24 A I didn't cut a guy named Michael Brown with a knife.
25 That happened in Asheville, and that was a cup that I

1 already told you earlier.

2 Q What about the -- the pepper spray in your car wasn't
3 for defense?

4 A That was her friend's Tiffany's that she left for her.

5 Q And the gun under the front seat wasn't for scaring --

6 A I don't know.

7 Q -- at least scare people away?

8 A I don't know. I didn't even know she had a gun.

9 Q Okay. Then the investigator says, "Did you or Theia
10 express any concerns about **Minor** being sick for dinner --
11 from dinner?"

12 A "I did ask her, like you got a feeling why he's
13 throwing up and whatnot. She was like he's thrown up
14 before. And I'm like, okay, I mean, he's your son. I
15 really can't make you do anything for him. But that's kind
16 of weird he threw up and pooped on himself. But we had been
17 trying to potty train him for a while, so he has pooped on
18 himself before. So it wasn't really too strange that he had
19 pooped on himself."

20 Q Now, I thought you just told us that when the child
21 threw up on himself in the bedroom --

22 A Yes, sir.

23 Q -- and you took him, you wiped off the clothes --

24 A Yes, sir.

25 Q -- and then you ran the bath for him?

1 A Yes, sir.

2 Q And while that was happening Theia went to the gas
3 station?

4 A Yes, sir.

5 Q Well, how are you having this discussion about him
6 pooping on himself --

7 A That was --

8 Q -- if you took the child to the bathroom to wash him
9 off?

10 A That was on the way down here to Newberry. This
11 conversation. It said that in there.

12 Q So when the investigator asked if you expressed any
13 concerns about being sick, that wasn't until after you were
14 in the drive -- after you had agreed to go to Newberry?

15 A Yes.

16 THE COURT: I apologize for interrupting. Solicitor,
17 Mr. Verner, would y'all approach briefly, please?

18 (Whereupon, a sidebar was held outside of the presence
19 of the jury.)

20 THE COURT: Ladies and gentlemen of the jury, it is
21 approximately 7:25. I will tell you that I've been trying
22 cases for about 23 years now and you guys are some very good
23 sports and some hardworking individuals. If you ever need a
24 reference from an employer about how dedicated you are, I'll
25 be more than happy to provide my card to you and you can

1 offer it at your convenience. What we're going to do is
2 take a break for the evening because we still have some more
3 work to do with regard to this witness. If I am fading and
4 I do this professionally then y'all may be fading as well.
5 Obviously, it's important to pay as close attention as
6 possible to the witnesses who testify. I'm going to ask
7 that you be back in the jury room in the morning at 9:00.
8 Counsel will be out here and everybody will be out here and
9 we will start promptly at 9:00. I'm not seeing anybody
10 object to that so we're going to go with that. See you at 9
11 in the morning. Same rules apply. Don't talk about the
12 case. Have a great evening. You've earned it. See you in
13 the morning. Thank you.

14 (Whereupon, the jury exited the courtroom at 7:25 p.m.)

15 THE COURT: Sir, no discussing your testimony with
16 anyone over the evening.

17 MR. BOWMAN: Understood.

18 THE COURT: If I could see the attorneys in chambers and
19 Mr. Brown, join us too. We'll be at ease.

20 Trial Day 4

21 THE COURT: One housekeeping matter. The Clerk of Court
22 called me this morning explaining that juror number 179, Ms.
23 Miller, had basically woken up with a rather extreme case of
24 vertigo and that she was unable to sit up. The Clerk then
25 called her back after speaking to me and asked her to make

1 all reasonable efforts to get here. I told the Clerk to
2 instruct her that if it was not possible and she was not
3 able to function or sit up erect then we would be inclined
4 to use the alternate. Ms. Miller called back subsequently
5 and explained that she was not in any position to serve any
6 longer and she very much wanted to address this. Obviously
7 she was invested or she felt very invested in this case. If
8 I'm not mistaken, Ms. Miller is the white female who has
9 been sitting on the back row with the black hair and
10 somewhat slender build. So we're going to be substituting
11 Mr. Lominick who is the alternate. We will be substituting
12 him for Ms. Miller. I will explain that when they come out.
13 Nothing further before the jury comes out? Let's have the
14 jury, please.

15 (Whereupon, the jury entered the courtroom at 9:05
16 a.m.)

17 THE COURT: Ladies and gentlemen of the jury. Welcome
18 back. Good morning. We had a few problems this morning.
19 One of which was Ms. Miller, Juror 179. Unfortunately, she
20 suffers from vertigo. As someone who actually had to try
21 and hold court with vertigo myself I sympathize with her.
22 She is simply unable to continue to serve. She can't even
23 sit up, is what she related to us. I've excused her from
24 further responsibility concerning this case, which means Mr.
25 Lominick, you'll be the -- you will substitute for her. We

1 have to have at least 12 jurors, so you will be now a full
2 member of the jury. This happens about half the time, Mr.
3 Lominick. Consider yourself now a full member of the jury
4 and you will participate in deliberations once we get this
5 case to you. We are still involved in the cross-examination
6 of the last witness. Again, thank you for being here this
7 morning. We also had a logistical issue with transport from
8 SCDC which I had to resolve, but that's now been resolved.
9 We are now going to continue with the cross-examination of
10 this witness. Sir, I'll remind you that you're still under
11 oath. Mr. Verner, you are recognized, sir.

12 MR. VERNER: May it please the Court.

13 RESUME CROSS-EXAMINATION

14 BY MR. VERNER:

15 Q Good morning, Mr. Bowman.

16 A Good morning, sir.

17 Q I think let's just get to where we both know the
18 questions are going.

19 A All right.

20 Q You told Investigator McClurken, Chief McClurken, and
21 the SLED investigator that on the evening -- on the date
22 that Minor was dead and you saw the two investigators,
23 that when you started hitting or beating the child that
24 Theia was not in the home; is that true?

25 A Yes, sir. And I didn't tell I was hitting or beating.

1 I spanked him.

2 Q You're going to have to speak up. I cannot hear you.

3 A I said I did not say I was beating him. I just spanked
4 him.

5 Q You testified when he made you angry because of the
6 poop in the tub and the throw up and you hit him, that Theia
7 was not at the home; is that true?

8 A Did I tell that to the SLED agent, you asked me?

9 Q Yes, sir. And the investigator.

10 A Yes, that night. Yes. And it wasn't under anger.

11 Q At times you had Theia have had a violent relationship?
12 Physically violent?

13 A Yes, sir.

14 Q At times you have been a controlling boyfriend?

15 A No, sir.

16 Q You didn't disable the car so she couldn't leave the
17 home?

18 A No, sir. That was not me.

19 Q You've been in lockup, in custody, for over a year
20 facing this charge; is that correct?

21 A Yes, sir. We both have.

22 Q You've had access to all of the State's case for a
23 substantial period of that time?

24 A Yes, sir.

25 Q You've seen the evidence?

1 A Yes, sir.

2 Q You read the autopsy reports?

3 A I didn't read the autopsy reports, but I've seen
4 everything else. Yes, sir.

5 Q Well, you told the prosecutors just a month and a half
6 ago you read the autopsy reports, didn't you?

7 A No. But I still -- I don't understand the stuff in it.

8 Q You browsed through it but you didn't understand them?

9 A Yes.

10 Q But you understand **Minor's** dead and he got beaten to
11 death, don't you?

12 A I understand that there was two different things inside
13 the autopsy report. The doctor said he had vomit in his
14 lungs and the autopsy report says something different.

15 Q Now, you understand you're in jail charged in some way
16 for the killing of **Minor** don't you?

17 A Yes, sir.

18 Q And you've had the benefit of two lawyers during this
19 time, haven't you?

20 A Yes, sir. One that I fired prior because he wouldn't
21 see me.

22 Q I don't care. I'm not getting in your business. But
23 you've had legal advice over that period of that last year,
24 right?

25 A Yes, sir.

1 Q You were aware you were going to trial this month,
2 right?

3 A Yes, sir.

4 Q At some point somebody must have told you, or you
5 figured it out yourself, that you're in a bad position.
6 That your stories just don't work and that you better change
7 your strategy. Is that fair to say?

8 A No, sir. It was no change in strategy. They asked me
9 -- I was asked to come forth with what happened that day.

10 Q The -- and, in fact, it would be fair to say that
11 you've given just so many different side tails and stories
12 that it's just almost impossible to figure out what you're
13 even talking about?

14 A Only two stories. Yes, sir.

15 Q You had a meeting with members of the prosecution about
16 two and a half weeks ago, right?

17 A Yes, sir.

18 Q You admit the stories -- you admit giving confessions
19 or statements to the police on December 30th of 2014, but
20 you're now saying that I lied at that time?

21 A Yes, sir.

22 Q In fact, the stories you gave the prosecutors just two
23 and a half months ago were so unbelievable they walked out
24 of the room on you, didn't they?

25 A Two -- you said two and a half months ago?

1 Q On March 10th.

2 A Okay.

3 Q The stories were so unbelievable they left you and your
4 attorney alone; is that correct?

5 A We were going over the story about what happened that
6 night, yes.

7 Q And then you all -- you met with your attorney and you
8 called him back and changed your story and agreed to testify
9 today?

10 A I didn't change my story, but just gave him the full
11 story.

12 Q So you initially just gave them part of the story, but
13 they walked out on you, and then you said, okay, I'll give
14 you the rest of what you want, and they came back. Is that
15 --

16 A They asked me about what happened on the 29th. I had
17 to explain the 27th and 28th as well.

18 Q And you spoke to them for about three hours, or 72
19 pages, which I'm just too tired to go over anymore with you
20 line by line. Is that fair to say?

21 A I'm not sure how long the time was, but --

22 Q You've seen the case file?

23 A Yes, sir.

24 Q You're aware that a lot -- in fact, all the evidence
25 points at you, right?

1 A No, actually it doesn't, sir. I've seen the full case
2 file and the other parts that weren't brought up in this
3 trial, I guess.

4 Q Minor would have been dead at least 15 minutes, up to
5 two hours, before you even took him to the emergency room
6 with Theia; is that correct?

7 MR. DANIEL: Objection, Your Honor. That would be
8 speculation.

9 THE COURT: Sustained.

10 Q How long was Minor dead before you took him to the
11 emergency room?

12 A I figured out he wasn't responding when she got in the
13 car.

14 Q How long was that before he's not responding, how long
15 before you took him to the emergency room?

16 A We took him immediately to the emergency room. We were
17 trying to drive towards it. She wanted to go to Laurens and
18 I said we need to find a hospital right then and there.

19 Q So how long did it take you to go from the man's house
20 in Newberry to the hospital?

21 A I honestly couldn't say, sir. I didn't have a watch on
22 and I wasn't timing it.

23 Q It's a panic situation and time just moves at different
24 speeds in that type of situation, right?

25 A Yes, sir.

1 Q Is it possible it took you 15 minutes to get to the
2 hospital?

3 A I'm not sure, sir.

4 Q How long had Minor been unresponsive before you took
5 him to the hospital?

6 A We took him immediately once he was non-responsive, as
7 I just stated, sir.

8 Q How long was he non-responsive in the car? Because you
9 told Theia something concerning. You said he's -- he had
10 stopped waking up in the car. How long had that been?

11 A He had stopped breathing, but I woke him up and he was
12 breathing again, and I went to sleep myself.

13 Q And then you said I panicked and I started honking --
14 well, you didn't say panic, but you said I started honking
15 the horn.

16 A And honked the horn, yes.

17 Q How long -- I assume, if you're honking the horn while
18 she's entertaining a gentleman, that you think it's an
19 emergency situation enough to get her out of that house?

20 A Yes, sir.

21 Q But not enough of an emergency to actually knock on the
22 door or call 911 yourself, right?

23 A I didn't have a phone at the time. Her phone was
24 inside with her. And it would be kind of strange for me to
25 just go in some random guy's house that he didn't even know

1 I was outside the house.

2 Q You understand -- you've seen the autopsy report. I
3 understand you said you don't completely understand it. But
4 you've been over it, haven't you?

5 A Bits and pieces of it. Yes, sir.

6 Q But you understand that Minor died within minutes of
7 that head wound? Do you not understand that?

8 A I didn't understand that.

9 MR. DANIEL: Objection, Your Honor. That would be
10 assuming something that's not in evidence.

11 THE COURT: Overruled.

12 MR. VERNER: I believe the doctor --

13 THE COURT: I'll let the question stand.

14 Q Do you know that there's blood -- is there blood in
15 that car?

16 A I'm not sure, sir.

17 Q Well, let's get this straight. We know that Theia
18 arrived at that man's house about 12:22 from that phone
19 call. Is that about -- you all made a phone call from
20 outside that home?

21 A I didn't make a phone call. She did.

22 Q And you left Laurens -- or Spartanburg for Newberry
23 about what time?

24 A I'm guessing around 11:00, or maybe 10:00-ish. I'm not
25 sure, sir.

1 Q Maybe even closer to 12:00?

2 A I'm not sure, sir.

3 Q You testified that you -- well, you've given statements
4 that you're the one who woke up Minor dressed him and put
5 him in the car to go to Newberry.

6 A Yes, sir. That's the statement I gave.

7 Q Prior to that time Theia had been gone on a call for --
8 since about 7:00 or 8:00 with only one time quickly to come
9 back and bring that kitten that she found?

10 A The cat back. Yes, sir.

11 Q So that leaves Richard Bowman alone with Minor
12 McArdle from somewhere between 7:00 and 8:00 p.m. until you
13 reach the hospital? That child is in your continuous
14 presence from somewhere between 7:00, 8:00, 9:00, 10:00,
15 11:00, 12:00, 1:00, 1:35 at the hospital. What, about seven
16 hours is that?

17 A Yes, sir.

18 Q Continuously that child was in your presence?

19 A Yes, sir.

20 Q And the question I want to know is, either that child
21 did something that made you so angry in Spartanburg while
22 Theia was gone that you got too angry and lost control and
23 hit the child and he went to bed, or you put him in bed.
24 You know the vomit is in the child's bed, not in your bed,
25 right?

1 A Yes, sir. And I already explained to you about that
2 yesterday, sir.

3 Q Well, explain it to me again.

4 A Some of his stuff was in our room when he was eating
5 and his vomit did go on his stuff as well. I had wiped the
6 vomit off his stuff that was on it, put it in his bed -- and
7 I put it on his bed when he went to go to sleep. And I
8 wiped off the stuff in our room as well. And no, to answer
9 your question. I didn't get mad at him at all.

10 Q When you beat him like that, did it make you physically
11 unwell that you threw up?

12 A No, sir. I threw up before that, sir.

13 Q You told the investigators that when you first hit him,
14 you're saying the only time, but Theia had already gone to
15 the store. So your story to the jury yesterday that Theia
16 was with you and she's the one who told you to hit him would
17 not be true, right?

18 A That is true.

19 Q Either **Minor** because he defecated in the toilet or
20 threw up, made you so angry that you hit him so hard --

21 A He didn't throw up in the --

22 Q -- or beat him and then put him to bed that he did not
23 recover the rest of the night?

24 A We established yesterday the vomit in the toilet, that
25 was my vomit.

1 Q We established that yesterday --

2 A Yeah, you asked --

3 Q -- or you said that yesterday?

4 A You asked me that. We established that yesterday. And
5 the reason why he got popped on the butt was just the fact
6 that he defecated in the bathtub. That was stated yesterday
7 as well, sir.

8 Q Theia had left at 7:00 or 8:00 and when she came home
9 it's almost 11:00, because you all only spent a few minutes
10 before you decided to go to Newberry, right?

11 A We spent a couple of minutes trying to decide whether
12 she wanted to go or not. And I really wasn't trying to go
13 because I was tired.

14 Q Minor would have been, for all intents and purposes,
15 long asleep ordinarily by the time Theia came home at 11:00
16 to 12:00 at night?

17 A He had actually woken up from her coming inside being
18 loud.

19 Q And that if you put the child in the car, she wouldn't
20 have seen the condition of that child at that time. She
21 would have assumed he's sleeping, right?

22 A He was actually awake whenever he got in the car. He
23 was wining and whatnot. I stated yesterday when I told the
24 Solicitor when he asked me about that.

25 Q Well, let's go to that theory. That Minor's still

1 conscious when you put him in the car.

2 A Yes, sir.

3 Q You've had no testimony that Theia punched that child
4 in the head or -- other than you're saying that at times you
5 put the child in the carseat and then at times you're saying
6 she got frustrated and putting him in the carseat and hit
7 him in the stomach.

8 A Yes, sir.

9 Q But when she drove with the child directly behind her
10 from Spartanburg to Newberry --

11 A Yes, sir.

12 Q -- that child's not hitable if you're driving down the
13 road.

14 A She wasn't driving at the time, as I stated yesterday.
15 We were still in our parking -- our driveway. She wasn't
16 driving.

17 Q You were driving?

18 A No, she was driving.

19 Q Right.

20 A Mean, we were still parked. He was trying to put on
21 his seatbelt -- or his buckle. We weren't driving at that
22 time. So it's kind of easy to turn around if you're in the
23 driver's seat.

24 Q And then you said that she hit him in the stomach?

25 A Yes, sir.

1 Q And you've also told us before that you were at some
2 guy named David's house and she hit him or -- hit him in the
3 crotch because he grabbed his crotch --

4 A Yes, sir.

5 Q -- conveniently that nobody saw even though it was at
6 somebody's house?

7 A Yes, sir. David was inside the kitchen making dinner
8 and cooking.

9 Q He was inside the kitchen, but you told the prosecutors
10 in March 10th that it might have happened in the car and
11 that's the reason. When they asked you why he didn't see it
12 you said, well, maybe it happened in the car.

13 A I didn't say it happened in the car. I said it
14 happened in his house. That might have been a typo. Or not
15 a typo. Not a typo. But it might not have been. But it
16 happened inside the house.

17 Q So if you told the prosecutors two weeks ago that the
18 reason David didn't see it was maybe it happened in the car
19 at this house, that would be a mistake on your part or an
20 untruthfulness?

21 A It was a mistake being said on my part, yes. We were
22 inside his house at the time when that happened.

23 Q And then you also told the prosecutors that -- well,
24 there was an incident the day beforehand, or something about
25 going to McDonald's and --

1 A Yes, sir.

2 Q -- and Minor had punched or hit a child and Theia had
3 slapped him in the back of the head?

4 A Yes, sir.

5 Q Again, that was in a day or two of Minor dying?

6 A The 28th. Yes, sir.

7 Q And it didn't occur to you to tell the police the day
8 that Minor died, did it?

9 A No, sir.

10 Q And your testimony then was only that she slapped him
11 in the back of the head, right?

12 A Yes, sir.

13 Q And again, there's nobody to corroborate what your
14 story is, right?

15 A The investigators asked me that day when he talked to
16 me about what happened that day, not two days prior.

17 Q So you wouldn't have had any reason to tell him what
18 happened the day before --

19 A When I did try to establish --

20 Q -- if it's significant?

21 A When I did try to go off and explain they said what
22 happened within 24 hours, because they said all the stuff
23 that happened to him happened within 24 hours.

24 Q And you also told the prosecutors that you actually had
25 gone to Laurens to the cell phone, because Theia had broken

1 your phone or done something with it because you were
2 talking to a woman. And then you went to a cell phone store
3 in Laurens to get it replaced.

4 A It's not in Laurens. It's in Spartanburg County.

5 Q The Cellular One place, or what's the place called
6 again?

7 A I'm not sure the name of the place. It's like Cellular
8 One or something, I believe.

9 Q Cellular One. And again, you're saying that he --
10 Minor aggravated her and so she hit Minor at the cell
11 phone store, right?

12 A I didn't say the cell phone place. I said the laundry
13 mat.

14 Q At the laundry mat? Well, you did say the cell phone
15 place because they asked you did the store clerk see it, and
16 you said, well, he must have been busy stocking phones or
17 something. Is that correct?

18 A That was a completely different incident. We didn't go
19 to a cell phone place that day. We went on the 27th. Not
20 the 28th.

21 Q So the cell phone place happened two days beforehand?

22 A Yes, sir.

23 Q And that was where?

24 A In Spartanburg County at the Cellular One place.

25 Q And then you also said on the 27th that you had gone

1 with Theia to court to Asheville on the 27th, right?

2 A Yeah. That was my initial --

3 Q Because you had court there?

4 A Yes, sir. That was my initial report. Yes, sir.

5 Q And then they asked you about what kind of court opens
6 up on a Saturday and you said, well, I remember we did court
7 but I can't really -- your details fell away again, right?

8 A I didn't even remember exactly which day we went up
9 there for court, but we had been up there at court -- or to
10 court between one of those days. The day prior, whichever.
11 I'm not sure. We had to go to Henderson County as well as
12 Asheville.

13 Q So you've got -- what you've decided to say is that
14 Theia must have hit the child in the past or spanked him too
15 hard that killed him on the 29th? Just that these were
16 lingering wounds that just finally got to this child over
17 time?

18 A Is that what I'm saying? I don't know.

19 Q I don't know what you're saying.

20 A I don't know medically anything about how that works,
21 so I couldn't really tell you if it was over the time or
22 what.

23 Q Well, let's go back to your story that **Minor** was
24 still conscious or alive when you put him in the carseat and
25 you all took him to Newberry.

1 A Yes, sir.

2 Q Because you've also indicated at times he was talking
3 to you during that ride down there. You said he was whiny
4 and cranky at times.

5 A He was cranky throughout the time we was going down
6 there. I wasn't talking to him. I was talking to her.

7 Q At times you said he started snoring?

8 A Yes. He had started snoring once we hit the Clinton
9 exit. He fell asleep at that point.

10 Q Snoring so loud that you thought he might have sleep
11 apnea like you have?

12 A Yes, sir.

13 Q Okay. And then at times you said when he stopped
14 breathing that you asked him if he was okay and he said
15 uh-huh?

16 A We were in the parking lot -- or the driveway of the
17 gentleman's house. Yes, sir.

18 Q So that makes that boy conscious and thinking and alive
19 while we know Theia had been gone. That theory means that
20 that child threw up or did something in the car, or you got
21 impatient or angry at Theia and took it out on the child and
22 hit him in the car.

23 A No, sir.

24 Q Well, I mean, it's either somebody beats him in
25 Spartanburg and puts him to bed or somebody beats him in

1 Newberry.

2 A No, sir.

3 Q It's one or the other, isn't it?

4 A No, sir.

5 Q What's the third option?

6 A I'm not sure, sir. But I didn't put my hands on him
7 inside the car. I was actually asleep in the car. I told
8 that to the investigators when they asked me, too. They
9 said what time was it. I said I wasn't paying attention.
10 The clock in the car wasn't working. I didn't have my
11 phone. I didn't have a watch, and I was asleep.

12 Q But you've said you had gone on the 27th to get your
13 phone replaced.

14 A It was still broken, sir. I didn't have a phone. I
15 said that yesterday like twice.

16 Q Then what's the point of going to the phone store on
17 the 27th?

18 A We went to a cell phone place to see if he can repair
19 it, but he wasn't able to repair it.

20 Q Were there any other phones found in your home?

21 A I'm not sure. I think one was a T-Mobile that belonged
22 to her, but it wasn't mine. That was **Minor's** play phone.

23 Q Do you know if it was blood in the backseat of that
24 car?

25 A Somewhere. But I cleaned up his face and gave him CPR.

1 There was the stuff that came out of his nose. I'm not sure
2 if it was blood or vomit.

3 Q Do you know at times that -- your initial story was I
4 was in the backseat the whole time with Minor when we were
5 in Newberry. But that was kind of bad because that puts you
6 next to that child, doesn't it?

7 A Yes, sir.

8 Q So your story today is I was actually in the front seat
9 the whole time, because that puts you a little bit further
10 away from that child, right?

11 A I was in the passenger seat for the drive down. And
12 remember I got to the backseat because I was trying to
13 resuscitate him with CPR.

14 Q You were in the front seat sitting on those Strawberita
15 beer cans.

16 A They were underneath the seat, if I saw the pictures
17 correctly from what my attorney showed me.

18 Q You understand the injuries to that child are more
19 serious than just punching him in the groin several days
20 beforehand?

21 A If I was looking at the autopsy report correctly and it
22 was explained to me. Yes, sir.

23 Q The reason you said you didn't see bruises in
24 Spartanburg while -- from the -- when the prosecutors and
25 many investigators asked you for days did you see any

1 bruises on the child and you said no. And at times you
2 said, well, I'm squeamish. I don't like looking at naked
3 bodies.

4 A Days? It was only the very first day that the
5 investigator ever talked to me. And I did inform him that I
6 saw a bruise on him from whenever her and her son were at
7 the hotel alone. And whenever she came to get me with the
8 client to bring me out there, due to had repaired the
9 argument that we had gotten into, and I saw a bruise on his
10 stomach. It was me as well as a young lady named Tiffany
11 that saw the same bruise and I asked her what happened. She
12 said he had fell into the bed. And I stated that yesterday
13 as well, sir.

14 Q So that was the bed that he fell on when she had left
15 you to leave her mobile home and move into a hotel in
16 Spartanburg?

17 A Yes, sir.

18 Q And a car that she or her mother had gotten because you
19 wouldn't fix --

20 A Her mother --

21 Q -- and locked off the other car?

22 A Her mother -- I didn't lock off that car, first off.
23 She locked it. Her mother took her to that hotel, and then
24 she bought herself another car while doing whatever she was
25 doing with her son while he was in the room.

1 Q The reason that you give a child a bath and you don't
2 see bruises on him on the 29th is because at that point the
3 child didn't have those bruises on him?

4 A He did have bruises on him on the 29th.

5 Q Well, how do you give a bath without seeing bruises
6 like that on him?

7 A And I didn't bathe him. I had already explained
8 yesterday as well, sir.

9 Q How do you put a naked child -- or how do you have a
10 naked child sit in the bathroom with you, run the bathtub
11 for him, wash him off, watch him run through the house and
12 not see profound bruises? There's only one of two options.
13 I lied because I'm covering for somebody, or at that time
14 there were no bruises on **Minor**

15 A Sir, my initial statement I did lie to cover for her.
16 But I just gave my statement yesterday and stated he was in
17 there by himself and gave himself a bath. He took off his
18 own clothes, his own pull up and get in the bath. I stated
19 that yesterday when you asked me this question.

20 Q Well, I'm curious because you never seemed to have lied
21 to cover up for her before.

22 A Actually I did from the initial whenever I was
23 questioned by the investigators and everything, sir.

24 Q Well, just -- you've already made an agreement that the
25 prosecutor is going to try to help you if you testify today,

1 correct?

2 MR. DANIEL: Objection, Your Honor.

3 A No. I did not say anything -- sorry. Go ahead.

4 THE COURT: Go ahead. Go ahead. Answer.

5 A No, that was not said by me whatsoever. I believe
6 you're putting words in my mouth. The prosecution asked me
7 yesterday was I promised anything and I stated no. You
8 asked me the same question. So you're putting words into my
9 mouth.

10 Q Okay. Well, I'm going to let you argue. Under any
11 hope that perhaps your testimony and cooperation with the
12 prosecution will help you in our dire situation today?

13 A No, sir. None what --

14 Q You don't think that possibly a conviction, getting
15 these charges put over on **Minor's** mother, will help out
16 Richard Bowman in a big way?

17 A I don't even know, sir.

18 Q You don't even know that?

19 A No, I don't.

20 Q You're going to let the next jury decide that? And
21 you're not going to try to point fingers? You're just going
22 to let the chips fall where they may?

23 A Yes, sir. If it comes down to that, yes, sir. I will.

24 Q That's right. I'm sure you will. And I suggest this.
25 That you've got a much better chance, don't you, of -- at

1 the next trial showing that that baby was killed in
2 Spartanburg and not Newberry, because then they won't have
3 jurisdiction of you, right?

4 A You're the lawyer. I wouldn't know that.

5 Q Nobody's told you that?

6 A No, sir.

7 Q That they got to prove it happened here in Newberry?

8 A No, sir. As I said, you're the lawyer.

9 Q Well, just tell me which is it. **Minor** died in
10 Spartanburg or **Minor** died in Newberry?

11 A Whenever he was non-responsive he was in Newberry.
12 Whenever he was non-responsive we were inside the man's
13 driveway.

14 Q So your testimony is that **Minor** was still alive and
15 talking, responsive here in Newberry?

16 A Yes, sir.

17 Q Well, then you're in some legal trouble, aren't you?

18 A I'm guessing so.

19 Q And at that time that boy had not been out of your
20 custody for seven or so hours?

21 A On the 29th?

22 Q That's right.

23 A He was in both of our care throughout that day. He was
24 solely in my care towards 7:00 and 8:00 whenever she went to
25 her first call. And then when she came back he was in our

1 care -- both of our care yet again. Then when she went to
2 the man's house at 12:00, as she kindly said, that's when he
3 was in my care. So he was in both of our care throughout
4 the day.

5 Q That's right. And since 7:00 or 8:00 that night the
6 only time Theia had been around him was once when you she --
7 you said she briefly dropped off a stay cat she found and
8 then she left again.

9 A No, throughout the morning. There's more than 7:00 to
10 8:00 to 12:00 at night. There's 9:00 in the morning all the
11 way to that time as well, sir.

12 Q So your testimony now is that this child was in that
13 physical condition since the morning?

14 A I wasn't saying he was in that physical condition since
15 the morning. What I am saying and stating is that he was in
16 our care throughout that whole day.

17 Q That's right.

18 A You're trying to say that he was solely in my care. He
19 was around me for 24 hours. That was not the case. He was
20 around me and his mother.

21 Q That's right. But he was exclusively with you from
22 about 7:00 to 8:00 on?

23 A Yes, sir. Until the time --

24 Q And during that time we know that Theia had been out of
25 the home on at least the gas station, visiting a customer in

1 Spartanburg, you said she came back just a few minutes
2 before you all decided to go to Newberry, she drove, she
3 immediately went into the house, and then you all
4 immediately took that child back to the doctor. So for
5 seven hours that doesn't give Theia any time alone or any
6 time -- extended time at all with the child, right?

7 A Yes, sir.

8 Q So you understand I'm suggesting that you got angry
9 either in Spartanburg or in Newberry because the child had
10 been driving you crazy and messing on himself, throwing up,
11 and you lost your temper for whatever reason. I'm not
12 suggesting in intentionally killed that child. I'm
13 suggesting that you lost your temper either in Spartanburg,
14 or you lost your temper, you'd been arguing with Theia on
15 the ride over to Newberry, you're sitting in that car for
16 about an hour with that child who's cranky --

17 MR. DANIEL: Your Honor, he's testifying. He needs to
18 do it in the form of a question.

19 THE COURT: We need a question.

20 Q Did you kill Minor

21 A I've already answered this question before. No, I
22 didn't.

23 Q So all your statements before are wrong?

24 A The ones that I gave previously to the investigators on
25 December 30th, yes, they are.

RICHARD BOWMAN: REDIRECT EXAMINATION

643

1 Q And any medical reports that might suggest that you're
2 suspect are just incorrect?

3 A I'm not sure what medical statements are but -- or what
4 the medical statements are saying. But okay.

5 Q I'm sure we'll see them soon.

6 A Yes, sir.

7 Q And as Theia points out, even by your own story out of
8 your own words, you're saying Theia didn't even wake up
9 until 11:00 or 12:00.

10 A Yes, that day.

11 Q So even for that better part of that morning she would
12 have been -- the child would have been in your custody and
13 care, not Theia's?

14 A From 8:00 to 10:00, yes. But if I'm going to point
15 this out, like you can point out things. If there was
16 anything done to that child his mother would have woken up,
17 I'm pretty sure, to crying and/or screaming of a child.

18 Q If she was there. Thank you.

19 A She was there.

20 THE COURT: Redirect?

21 REDIRECT EXAMINATION

22 BY MR. DANIEL:

23 Q Mr. Bowman, I'll try to be as concise as I can with my
24 redirect, but I'm going to cover some ground Mr. Verner
25 asked you on cross-examination and I'm going to clarify some

1 points. Mr. Verner, I think initially yesterday on his
2 examination, showed you some stuff off your Facebook
3 account, correct?

4 A Yes, sir.

5 Q And it was, what?

6 A A zombie baby from a toy maker that makes toys online
7 or --

8 Q This picture right here?

9 A Yeah, that's one of them. That one.

10 Q Defense No. 4.

11 A Yeah. It's a Voldemort baby from Harry Potter, if
12 anybody knows who Harry Potter is.

13 Q This is from Harry Potter?

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q It's a doll?

16 A Yes, sir.

17 Q Do you have a morbid obsession with death?

18 A No. No, sir.

19 Q Do you have a proclivity to seeing dead babies?

20 A No, sir.

21 Q What's Defense No. 3?

22 A That's supposed to be like a zombie apocalypse baby
23 that they made, as I said, the toy maker online. A friend
24 of mine from Ohio was sharing that stuff and she showed it
25 to me.

- 1 Q Zombie babies?
- 2 A Yes, sir.
- 3 Q Is Walking Dead a popular zombie show?
- 4 A Yes, sir. It is.
- 5 Q Is Harry Potter popular?
- 6 A Yes, sir. It is.
- 7 Q Does watching Twilight make you a vampire?
- 8 A No, sir.
- 9 Q Going back to your Facebook account again.
- 10 A Yes, sir.
- 11 Q I'm going to show you a printout from your Facebook
- 12 account. Do you recognize this posting? This highlighted
- 13 area?
- 14 A Yes, sir. I do.
- 15 Q Tell us the posting. What's it about? And what are
- 16 you referring to in that posting?
- 17 A Would you like me to read it off?
- 18 Q Sure.
- 19 A "I swear some folk be --"
- 20 Q Speak up. I can't hear you.
- 21 A "I swear some folks be fake as hell these days. Talk
- 22 about folks and when they see them they like, oh, hey, baby
- 23 momma, or blah blah. Be fake just all around. It's sad
- 24 they think that folks don't see through their bull-ish and
- 25 then expect to keep friends and people in line. Shake my

1 head. Wake up. We know and see through it. You're still
2 the same bad person and parent that you were when they first
3 took him away. You'd think you'd learn a lesson and foster
4 it, but some folks are just stuck on dumb and being a kid.
5 All I did -- all I can do is sit back and shake my head and
6 smile because you think you fool people. You're as
7 transparent as plastic wrap. Grow up and get over it. TND.
8 You got him back so act right." And then --

9 Q What day is that posting?

10 A That's December 19th, 2014.

11 Q And did you post that?

12 A Yes, sir. I did.

13 Q And that's your Facebook account?

14 A Yes, sir. It is.

15 Q What are you referring to there?

16 A I'm referring to the fact of the incidents of where
17 **Minor's** been taken from the numerous times back in North
18 Carolina from December 30th, 2011 -- or December 31st, 2011,
19 my bad, all the way till whenever she just recently got him
20 back June -- August of 2014.

21 Q Let me stop you. You said December 31st, 2011. He
22 would have been one day old, correct?

23 A Yes, sir. The hospital reported her for that.

24 Q Let's back up. Let me go back to another point Mr.

25 Verner brought up in his cross-exam. He was talking about

RICHARD BOWMAN: REDIRECT EXAMINATION

647

1 -- Mr. Verner asked you about domestic incidents --

2 A Yes, sir.

3 Q -- between you and Ms. McArdle, correct?

4 A Yes, sir.

5 Q And you've described some of them?

6 A Yes, sir.

7 Q I believe you mentioned a October 2014 incident at a
8 motel in Spartanburg County, correct?

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q Tell us about that incident.

11 A The incident happened where we initially got into an
12 argument and she left with a young woman named Brie and a
13 gentleman -- I forget what his name is off the top of my
14 head. She left. And I had a friend of mine that was in
15 Spartanburg County at the time. She came by and was talking
16 to me. She -- we were talking.

17 Q Let me stop you. Let me just get to the point, because
18 you're a little long-winded.

19 A Oh, I'm sorry.

20 Q Spartanburg Sheriff's Office --

21 A Yes. They --

22 Q -- came out to the hotel on October 5th, 2014, correct?

23 A Yes, sir. They came because she pulled a knife on me
24 and tried to cut me with my own knife, because I told her to
25 leave because I wasn't going to sit and argue with her while

1 she was being drunk and trying to start an argument and
2 fight with me. I told her to stop.

3 Q Let me stop you. And you told deputies that you were
4 trying to get Theia out of the hotel room because she was
5 bringing clients there, correct?

6 A Yes, sir. She had left a condom on the bed from one of
7 her clients. The very same bed that her son slept on. And
8 I had got on to her about that.

9 Q So you were upset that she was bringing clients to the
10 room where you and Minor --

11 A Yes, sir. There was an incident where there was a
12 client that came there while Minor was sleeping and she gave
13 him a service while Minor was still in bed.

14 Q And then, so you were moving Theia's stuff out of the
15 hotel room. You were kicking her out essentially?

16 A Yes, sir.

17 Q And she attacked you in some way?

18 A Yes, sir.

19 Q What did she do?

20 A She pulled my knife and she cut me with my knife. And
21 I did defend myself that day.

22 Q And you and Theia were both arrested by the deputy,
23 correct?

24 A Yes, sir.

25 Q And you all were both charged --

RICHARD BOWMAN: REDIRECT EXAMINATION

649

1 A Yes, sir.

2 Q -- with criminal domestic violence, correct?

3 A Yes, sir. They had to take me to the hospital to get
4 my hand cleaned up and whatnot from where I was cut.

5 Q So, in other words, the officer couldn't determine who
6 the primary aggressor was, correct?

7 A Yes, sir.

8 Q So they charged you both?

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q And those charges are still pending against you and
11 Theia in Spartanburg County, correct?

12 A Yes, sir.

13 Q Let's go through your criminal history. Is it accurate
14 to say nearly all of your arrests have no dispositions,
15 meaning those charges have been dropped, dismissed?

16 A Yes, sir. They all have.

17 Q And most of them are from Buncombe County, which is
18 Asheville area North Carolina, correct?

19 A Yes, sir. During the course of time I've lived with
20 Ms. McArdle.

21 Q And they all relate pretty much to domestic violent
22 incidents between you and Ms. McArdle, correct?

23 A Yes, sir.

24 Q Or you were trying to get back to the apartment and she
25 had you on trespass notice, correct?

1 A Yes, sir. No, the housing had me on trespassing
2 notice. I was trying to get my stuff to get out of the
3 apartment. She wouldn't allow me to get my stuff. She
4 either sold my stuff, or trashed my stuff, or got rid of my
5 stuff somewhere somehow.

6 Q But Ms. McArdle didn't want to prosecute you for that?

7 A No, sir.

8 Q She told the police up there she wanted to drop the
9 charges.

10 A She just didn't show up for court. And she knew that
11 there was court. They did subpoena her a lot of times to
12 try and get her to come and she refused to come to court.

13 Q And she was charged as well several times, too,
14 correct?

15 A Yes, sir. For assault, larcenies, child abuse in North
16 Carolina.

17 Q Well, let's stop you there. We'll get to that in a
18 second.

19 A All right.

20 Q And you said -- I believe the testimony yesterday was
21 she blacked your eye one time?

22 A Yes, sir. That was the very first incident that we had
23 gotten to. She punched me in my eye, that I explained to
24 Mr. Verner. It was she broke my phone, so I took her phone
25 and broke hers and she ended up punching me in the eye.

1 Q All right. Let me stop you. I don't care about that.

2 So she hit you hard enough to black your eye, correct?

3 A Yes, sir.

4 Q And was it visible the mark, obviously?

5 A Yes, sir. The police actually took a picture of it.

6 It was on the mug shot. My eye was swollen.

7 Q So you've got to hit somebody with a lot of force to
8 black their eye, correct?

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q Would she hit **Minor** as hard as she hit you?

11 A Yes, sir.

12 Q And you witnessed her hit **Minor** with the same amount of
13 force as you, correct?

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q Mr. Verner -- it was long yesterday obviously. He was
16 going through this so called transcript when you and I met
17 March 10th.

18 A Yes, sir.

19 Q So we didn't even meet a month ago?

20 A Yes, sir.

21 Q We sat right here, correct? This table?

22 A Yes, sir. We did.

23 Q Myself, Deputy Solicitor Dale Scott --

24 A Yes, sir.

25 Q -- who's the other prosecutor here in Newberry?

- 1 A Yes, sir.
- 2 Q He's my supervisor.
- 3 A Yes, sir.
- 4 Q Your attorney Russell Brown was here at that interview?
- 5 A Yes, sir.
- 6 Q We had his permission to talk to you?
- 7 A Yes, sir.
- 8 Q Investigator Bentley, who's behind the TV, was there?
- 9 A Yes, sir.
- 10 Q And Investigator Moore was there. Chief McClurken was
- 11 there?
- 12 A Yes, sir. And the county -- or the courthouse officers
- 13 as well.
- 14 Q Okay. And it was a lengthy interview, correct?
- 15 A Yes, sir. I believe it was.
- 16 Q And we did record it?
- 17 A Yes, sir.
- 18 Q For note taking purposes?
- 19 A Yes, sir.
- 20 Q And then we provided that recording to Mr. Verner?
- 21 A Yes, sir.
- 22 Q And then Mr. Verner made a transcript of it?
- 23 A Yes, sir.
- 24 Q And he was showing you that yesterday, going through it
- 25 line by line essentially?

1 A Yes, sir.

2 Q But there's two parts to that interview, correct?

3 A Yes, sir. There are two parts to that interview.

4 Q And he was showing you part one yesterday?

5 A Yes, sir. And skipping over a lot of it as well.

6 Q Okay. And I think just now today Mr. Verner said that
7 the prosecutors got upset with you and walked out?

8 A Yes, sir.

9 Q Is that fairly accurate?

10 A That was during the first part of the questioning.

11 Q Why did we get put out with you?

12 A Because Mr. Dale Scott said it sounded like I was
13 reciting to him from the motion of discovery.

14 Q He said you're telling us what's already in the file?

15 A Yes, sir.

16 Q And the reason we had the interview was because we were
17 under the impression you were going to tell us stuff that we
18 didn't know that led up to the death, correct?

19 A Yes, sir.

20 Q Specifically things that happened before you all got to
21 Newberry?

22 A Yes, sir. And my lawyer also explained to you guys
23 that I needed to talk to you and let you know what happened
24 days prior that led up to the 29th as well.

25 Q So specifically December 27th, 28th and December 29th

1 is what we cared about?

2 A Yes, sir.

3 Q And you'll admit that when you were interviewed by
4 Chief McClurken that you only told him part of the truth?

5 A Yes, sir. About what happened that day.

6 Q And you didn't tell him about December 27th and the
7 December 28th stuff?

8 A No, sir.

9 Q And you didn't tell Chief McClurken about Theia hitting
10 on **Minor** --

11 A No, sir.

12 Q -- that 72 hours leading up to **Minor's** death, correct?

13 A No, sir. I did not.

14 Q So you withheld that?

15 A Yes, sir. I did.

16 Q Because you're in love with this woman?

17 A Yes, sir.

18 Q In fact, she wrote you a note from the jail not too
19 long ago.

20 A Yes, sir.

21 Q She still has feelings for you?

22 A Yes, sir.

23 Q And you were trying to protect her?

24 A Actually, she wrote that to me while I was in Laurens
25 County, when I was out there back in August.

1 Q And so, you really obstructed this investigation,
2 didn't you?

3 A Yes, sir. I did.

4 Q That's a crime. Do you realize that?

5 A Yes, sir.

6 Q Well, let's go to this transcript and I'll be very
7 brief. I promise you. This is part two when we decided to
8 come back, correct? Part two.

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q And that's when you told us about the days leading up
11 to **Minor's** death?

12 A Yes, sir.

13 Q And that's what Mr. Verner didn't share with the jury
14 yesterday, correct?

15 A Yes, sir. Like I said, some other stuff in part one
16 that he didn't mention as well.

17 Q Okay. Let me get to my place in the transcript I want
18 to show you. If you could, read out the highlighted portion
19 of page four on part two of that interview we had a few
20 weeks ago.

21 A (Reading transcript)

22 Q That's why you were afraid to stand up to Theia,
23 correct?

24 A I have a history of being arrested because of stuff of
25 standing up and dealing with Theia and trying to tell her

1 not to do stuff with her child.

2 Q So that's why you were too weak to stop her from
3 hitting on **Minor** right?

4 A Yes, sir.

5 Q Let's go to page eight of the transcript. And when I
6 asked you questions on direct yesterday --

7 A Yes, sir.

8 Q You didn't tell me everything that you told me a few
9 weeks ago on part two of that interview?

10 A I didn't.

11 Q Let me show you page eight, the highlighted portions.

12 A Yes, sir.

13 Q See if you recall that. And read it out loud, please.

14 A (Reading transcript) Do you want me to read the next
15 one?

16 Q Go to. All right. That's all that's on page eight
17 that's highlighted?

18 A No, there's two more.

19 Q On page eight?

20 A Yes, sir.

21 Q Continue to read that.

22 A (Reading transcript)

23 Q So again, you left that out when I was questioning you
24 yesterday, correct?

25 A Yes, sir. It wasn't intentionally.

1 Q So right there you're describing multiple blows to the
2 stomach around lunchtime on December 29th.

3 A Yes, sir.

4 Q Read off page nine, please, what's highlighted.

5 A (Reading transcript) Do you want me to read from 10?

6 Q Please. No, excuse me. That's all on page nine that's
7 highlighted?

8 A Yes, sir.

9 Q Go to page 18 and read out what's highlighted.

10 A (Reading transcript)

11 Q That's all that's highlighted?

12 A Yes, sir.

13 Q I'll take that from you. Why didn't you tell me that
14 yesterday on direct when I asked you about all the times you
15 witnessed her hitting him on December 29th?

16 A It wasn't intentional, sir.

17 Q Really?

18 A It was nervousness, sir. I've never had to deal with
19 this stuff before.

20 Q You seem pretty calm up there. Is that accurate? I
21 mean, you seem calm. Are you calm on the inside?

22 A No, not really.

23 Q Are you still protecting Theia McArdle?

24 A No, sir. I'm not.

25 Q So was it relevant to talk about you hearing a

1 commotion around lunchtime and you walk in and she's
2 striking her son repeatedly in the stomach with a fist?

3 A Yes, sir. That's relevant.

4 Q Hitting him so hard he falls to the ground and hits his
5 head?

6 A Yes, sir. That's relevant.

7 Q Well, why didn't you tell me that when I asked you?

8 A As I said, it wasn't intentional, sir. I was nervous.

9 Q But you're talking about specific details from spark
10 plugs with Mr. Verner but you don't tell us that?

11 A He accused me of messing with a car that I didn't mess
12 with.

13 Q Moving on to -- Mr. Verner asked you a lot of questions
14 about the vomit in the house on December 29th and **Minor** being
15 sick from right after supper, correct?

16 A Yes, sir.

17 Q He didn't finish his food, did he?

18 A He didn't finish his food.

19 Q Because he started throwing up?

20 A Yes, sir.

21 Q And there was throw up throughout that house, correct?

22 A Yes, sir. There was some on our room -- in our room,
23 some that was on the stuff that he had in our room in his
24 bed as well.

25 Q And Theia is at home while **Minor** is throwing up?

RICHARD BOWMAN: REDIRECT EXAMINATION

659

1 A Yes, sir.

2 Q Because she made supper?

3 A Yes, sir. And it was still some time before she went
4 to her call as well.

5 Q So Theia is aware that her son is ill?

6 A Yes, sir.

7 Q Very ill?

8 A Yes, sir.

9 Q And Theia knows where the Laurens County Hospital is?

10 A Yes, sir. She had actually been there to get a staff
11 removed off her stomach.

12 Q She'd been there?

13 A Yes, sir. And to take a friend of hers. So she's been
14 there twice.

15 Q In fact, we saw a receipt from Laurens County Hospital
16 in the car that had Theia's name on it?

17 A Yes, sir.

18 Q And Laurens County Hospital is about 11 miles away from
19 Enoree.

20 A Yes, sir. It's not that far.

21 Q Newberry Hospital is over 30 miles away?

22 A Yes, sir.

23 Q But you all load **Minor** up in the care for a prostitution
24 care?

25 A Yes, sir.

1 Q When he's puking his brains out?

2 A Yes, sir.

3 Q You're aware that's aiding and abetting, correct?

4 A Yes, sir.

5 Q What you're doing?

6 A Yes, sir.

7 Q What you did? So you're here today admitting to a
8 crime?

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q We didn't offer you immunity to testify? You know we
11 can use that against you in your trial?

12 A Yes, sir.

13 Q But you're doing it anyway?

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q Let's go through some of these pictures. If you could,
16 just look on the TV, Mr. Bowman. What's that?

17 A That's the laundry --

18 Q Speak in the microphone, please.

19 A That's the laundry hamper and the kitchen area with
20 there.

21 Q Okay. A bunch of clothes with throw up was found in
22 that hamper, correct?

23 A Yes, sir.

24 Q Okay. That's a toilet bowl that's full of vomit,
25 correct?

- 1 A Yes, sir.
- 2 Q And you're saying that's your vomit?
- 3 A Yes, sir. I threw up that night as well.
- 4 Q Was there a stomach bug going around Enoree?
- 5 A I don't know. I didn't -- I don't think there was a
- 6 stomach bug.
- 7 Q So you and Minor just simultaneously throwing up?
- 8 A Yes, sir.
- 9 Q Is that strange?
- 10 A Yes, sir.
- 11 Q Minor's air mattress, correct?
- 12 A Yes, sir.
- 13 Q And you said he got sick on some of the linens,
- 14 correct?
- 15 A Yes, sir. That was in our room.
- 16 Q And that's Minor's pillow case?
- 17 A Yes, sir.
- 18 Q Are you aware there's vomit on that?
- 19 A Yes, sir. That was a pillow that was in our room he
- 20 was sitting on when he was sitting on our bed eating.
- 21 Q So you brought that -- that pillow was in y'all's
- 22 bedroom when he got sick?
- 23 A Yes, sir.
- 24 Q But then somehow he goes back to bed, correct, later
- 25 that night?

1 A I put it on the bed that night. I had tried to get
2 some of the vomit off of it.

3 Q So you take that same pillow that was on y'all's bed
4 that he got sick on in your bedroom?

5 A Yes, sir.

6 Q And you bring it back to the air mattress, correct?

7 A Yes, sir.

8 Q And he goes to sleep on it?

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q So that's why they didn't find any vomit in y'all's
11 bedroom?

12 A Yes, sir.

13 Q Because you brought that same pillow case to the air
14 mattress?

15 A Yes, sir.

16 Q That's got vomit on it, too. That's a grey hoodie,
17 correct?

18 A Yes, sir.

19 Q That's an adult male's hoodie?

20 A Yes, sir.

21 Q That's your hoodie?

22 A Yes, sir.

23 Q That's your -- you seem unsure about it. Does **Minor**
24 wear an adult male hoodie?

25 A No. But she has hoodies of herself as well. But that

- 1 -- I believe that is one of my hoodies.
- 2 Q So Theia does wear your hoodie from time to time?
- 3 A Yes, sir. She does.
- 4 Q Did Theia get sick that night?
- 5 A No, sir.
- 6 Q So you didn't have enough time to make it to the toilet
- 7 where you threw up on your own hoodie?
- 8 A Yes, sir. Some of it had got onto my hoodie as well.
- 9 But as I said, I used some of the clothes that was in the
- 10 hamper to clean up some of the throw up.
- 11 Q I thought you made it to the toilet to throw up?
- 12 A I did throw up in the toilet, but some of it still get
- 13 on me -- got on me, sir.
- 14 Q Isn't vomit projectile? It's not necessarily runny.
- 15 A Not necessarily for me, sir.
- 16 Q Okay. Coogi. What's Coogi. Coogi.
- 17 A Coogi is a name -- a brand -- label brand of clothing,
- 18 I guess.
- 19 Q Is that Minor's tee shirt?
- 20 A Yes, sir. It is.
- 21 Q And you're well -- you see that discoloration around
- 22 the collar?
- 23 A Yes, sir.
- 24 Q Is that vomit?
- 25 A I believe so. It is, sir. As I said, I used some of

1 the clothes to clean up the vomit in the room.

2 Q Was he wearing that tee shirt that night when he got
3 sick, or did you just use to clean up the vomit? Which one?

4 A I'm not sure. I do know that he -- we did put the Puma
5 shirt on him. That was the one that was in the car. That
6 might have been the one he was wearing. I'm not sure off
7 the top of my head, sir.

8 Q You don't use paper towels or something to clean up
9 vomit, or a mop or something? You use articles of clothing
10 to clean up vomit?

11 A We didn't have a mop in the house and we didn't have
12 paper towels.

13 Q Did you all have a washing machine in the house?

14 A No, sir. We didn't. We took our clothes to the
15 laundry mat.

16 Q So you're going to use clothes -- and it's not
17 necessarily easy for you to wash them without leaving your
18 house. You're going to use that to clean up vomit?

19 A Yeah, because we were going to -- plan on cleaning the
20 clothes the next day.

21 Q What's that? A towel with stains, correct?

22 A Yes, sir.

23 Q Did you use that to clean up vomit?

24 A Yes, sir.

25 Q Why didn't you just use that to clean up the vomit?

1 It's still got unsaturated parts on there. Why would you
2 use clothes if you've got a towel?

3 A I just grabbed a bunch of stuff to clean stuff up.

4 Q It must have been a lot of throw up --

5 A Yes, sir.

6 Q -- from **Minor**

7 A Yes, sir. And I had some in the bathroom on the floor,
8 and I cleaned up in there too, and on the toilet seat as
9 well.

10 Q That's a 28 pound baby throwing up a lot.

11 A Yes, sir.

12 Q That didn't concern you and Theia?

13 A It did concern me. I'm not sure if it concerned her.
14 I didn't think to call the police or -- not necessarily the
15 police, but the ambulance or anything.

16 Q But Theia was there at the time he's throwing up?

17 A Yes.

18 Q She's aware he's sick, correct?

19 A Yes, sir.

20 Q And after supper she leaves to go on that Spartanburg
21 John call?

22 A Yes, sir.

23 Q Didn't discuss seeking medical treatment at that time,
24 did you, before she left Spartanburg?

25 A No, sir.

1 Q That's a white tee shirt. That appears to be an adult
2 size.

3 A Yes, sir. That's my shirt.

4 Q Those are stains all over that.

5 A Yes, sir.

6 Q Was that vomit stains?

7 A Yes, sir. I believe that they are.

8 Q Why are there vomit on so many articles of clothing?
9 How many layers did you have on?

10 A That was something I actually used out of the dirty
11 hamper. I didn't have it on.

12 Q Why didn't you use the rest of that towel to wipe down?
13 Why do you keep going through clothes to get more vomit on?

14 A I was picking this stuff up, the vomit, trying to clean
15 up off the floor and off the bed and off this -- or not
16 mattress but pillow.

17 Q Theia wears your clothes sometimes, correct?

18 A Yes, sir. She does.

19 Q And I'm not trying to be disrespectful to Theia, but
20 she is a larger size woman, correct?

21 A Yes, sir.

22 Q And she can wear adult male clothes, broader shoulders?
23 It would fit her, correct?

24 A Yes, sir.

25 Q So **Minor's** throwing up all over you and Theia though,

RICHARD BOWMAN: REDIRECT EXAMINATION

667

1 correct? He's puking everywhere?

2 A Yes, sir.

3 Q Really? Okay. And again, what time is he throwing up?

4 That's around supper time. He didn't finish his meal as you

5 testified to, correct?

6 A Yes, sir. That was around 5:00 to 7:00, I believe.

7 Somewhere in that --

8 Q Somewhere in that range?

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q All right. What's that again? I know you identified

11 it once. Discussed it.

12 A That's the hoodie, I believe.

13 Q No, no, no. The yellow.

14 A Oh, it's a towel.

15 Q That's the backseat of Theia's Chevy Malibu?

16 A Yes, sir.

17 Q And that's got stains on it?

18 A Yes, sir.

19 Q Did you use that to wipe -- wipe anything up with?

20 A That was inside. Whenever we were in the back of the

21 car when I was trying to give him CPR and I cleaned the

22 stuff off his mouth to try to do the CPR and whatnot.

23 Q And that's after -- that's after Theia's back in the

24 car from the Newberry service call?

25 A Yes, sir.

1 Q And so, there's vomit -- or you said brown ooze
2 substance coming from his nose and mouth area?

3 A Yes, sir. That was while we were trying to drive to
4 get back home and I told her we needed to get to a hospital.
5 And she was intent on trying to go to the Laurens County
6 Hospital instead of the one in Newberry. And I told her, I
7 said, there has to be a hospital that's closer instead of
8 going all the way to Laurens. I said your son's not
9 responsive. There's stuff coming out of his nose. We need
10 to get to a hospital.

11 Q All right. Stop. I don't want to know that yet. And
12 you all took I-26 down to Newberry? That's the quickest way
13 from Enoree to get to Newberry? I-26 east?

14 A I'm guessing, sir.

15 Q But you were on I-26? You were on the interstate?

16 A Yes.

17 Q You told me that earlier?

18 A Yes, sir. I-26.

19 Q Are you aware that the first Newberry exit says
20 Hospital?

21 A No, sir.

22 Q In big bold letters, blue. And then when you get off
23 that exit there continues to be H all down Highway 121.

24 A I didn't know that, sir.

25 Q But Theia doesn't know there's a hospital in Newberry,

1 correct? She seemed unaware of that at first?

2 A Yes, sir. She was trying to get back towards Laurens
3 County because she said it was closer to home.

4 Q But when you all initially get off on exit 72, which is
5 the first exit for Newberry, she hadn't been to the John's
6 house yet at that point?

7 A No, sir.

8 Q So it was more important to go to the service call to
9 make \$120 first before taking Minor to the hospital?

10 A Yes, sir.

11 Q Because he was still responsive then, wasn't he?

12 A Yes, sir. He was.

13 Q Right.

14 A She didn't even mention to the nurse at that time that
15 he was responsive before -- like 10 minutes prior to getting
16 to the hospital. She said that to the nurse.

17 Q She's aware he's puking his guts out in Enoree around
18 supper. He's 28 pounds and he's throwing up everywhere.
19 Throw up on multiple articles of clothing. Towels, bed, and
20 it's more important to go to the service call first before
21 seeking medical treatment; is that correct?

22 A Yes, sir.

23 Q Again, is that a child sized tee shirt?

24 A Yes, sir. That's the shirt that he had on inside the
25 car at that time?

1 Q And you were in the backseat performing CPR at this
2 point?

3 A Yes, sir. While we were trying to get to the hospital.

4 Q And you removed his tee shirt?

5 A Yes, sir. To get the stuff off of us his face so I
6 could properly get to his mouth and try to do CPR and
7 whatnot.

8 Q Doing chest compressions and all that?

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q Do you know that from the military as part of your
11 first aid training?

12 A COS. Yes, sir.

13 Q And I'm going back here. I need to cover this. What's
14 significant about the TV on this cover table here and the
15 laptop computer?

16 A That's the very same coffee table when it was in the
17 bedroom that she had hit him and his head hit off of that.
18 And also, he head had hit it as well before when he was in
19 the room due to her.

20 Q Is that when you heard commotion around lunchtime on
21 December 29th?

22 A Yes, sir.

23 Q Is that because Minor had knocked that laptop off
24 that coffee table?

25 A Yes, sir. He had messed with the laptop and had messed

RICHARD BOWMAN: REDIRECT EXAMINATION

671

1 it up. She had got it set over there. She never wanted him
2 to touch the laptop.

3 Q And that was the reason you walked in and she was
4 hitting him in the stomach?

5 A Yes, sir.

6 Q Knocked him on the ground she hit him so hard?

7 A Yes, sir. And she also claimed that he bit her as
8 well.

9 Q And caused him to bump his head when he hit?

10 A Yes, sir.

11 Q And why didn't you share that with me yesterday when
12 I'm asking you? Again, you skipped over that entire part.
13 But you told us that a few weeks ago, correct?

14 A Correct.

15 Q I'm not going to ask you any conversations you've had
16 with your attorney. I mean, I appreciate the sanctity of
17 attorney/client privilege. But are you aware -- have you
18 read the statute your charged under? The law?

19 A Yes, sir. My first attorney gave me the statute for it.

20 Q So you know kind of the elements of that offense? What
21 kind of conduct or acts or omissions constitute that crime,
22 right?

23 A Yes, sir.

24 Q And you realize everything you just testified to, that
25 would constitute guilt?

1 A Yes, sir.

2 Q By your own admission?

3 A Yes, sir.

4 Q And you haven't been offered anything in exchange to
5 testify. You reached out to us and said you wanted to tell
6 us some things, correct?

7 A Yes, sir.

8 Q And we told you we weren't offering you anything.

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q So just to recap. December 27th you saw Theia hitting
11 on him?

12 A Yes, sir.

13 Q I think you said she slapped him on the head and hit
14 the coffee table on December 27th?

15 A Yes, sir.

16 Q Did you see her punch him in the stomach on December
17 27th?

18 A Yes, sir. I did.

19 Q Multiple times?

20 A Yes, sir.

21 Q A lot of force?

22 A Yes, sir.

23 Q As hard as she would hit you sometimes?

24 A Yes, sir. As hard as I've seen her hit other people as
25 well.

RICHARD BOWMAN: REDIRECT EXAMINATION

673

1 Q And did you tell us she hits as hard as a man?

2 A Yes, sir. She does.

3 Q And she would hit Minor as if he were a grown man?

4 A Yes, sir. That was -- that was in reference to an
5 incident that I had saw that happened in North Carolina.

6 Q December 28th you told us about the groin punch.

7 A Yes, sir.

8 Q After Minor mimicked something you did?

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q And then she punched him with a closed fist in the
11 groin?

12 A Yes, sir.

13 Q Did she hit him as hard in the grown as she hit you
14 when she blacked your eye?

15 A It seemed like she did, sir. Yes, sir.

16 Q And he winched and cried in pain?

17 A Yes, sir. He said owe.

18 Q And he was crying?

19 A Yes, sir.

20 Q December 28th?

21 A Yes, sir.

22 Q About what time on December 28th?

23 A That was around, I'm guessing, 5:00. It was in the
24 afternoon. Like late afternoon, evening. Because we were
25 at David's. He was cooking dinner and whatnot.

1 Q So that -- that injury had at least 24 hours or so to
2 set in --

3 A Yes, sir.

4 Q -- by the time he's at the hospital?

5 A Yes, sir.

6 Q And a bruise gets darker?

7 A Yes, sir.

8 Q Because initially when you get hit it's red, right, a
9 lot of times?

10 A Yes, sir.

11 Q And then eventually the next day it might be dark
12 purple?

13 A Yes, sir.

14 Q And then a few days later a bruise turns like yellow
15 maybe. Is that your experience?

16 A Yes, sir.

17 Q December 29th you see first thing in the morning,
18 December 29th, she wakes **Minor** -- or **Minor** wakes her up and
19 she punches him in the stomach, right?

20 A Yes, sir.

21 Q And then around lunch you have your earphones on
22 cleaning up and you hear commotion in the bedroom, correct?

23 A Yes, sir.

24 Q You walk in there and you find Theia punching him in
25 the stomach repeatedly?

RICHARD BOWMAN: REDIRECT EXAMINATION

675

- 1 A Yes, sir.
- 2 Q And then you see her knock him to the ground on
- 3 December 29th?
- 4 A Yes, sir.
- 5 Q Around lunchtime?
- 6 A Yes, sir.
- 7 Q And he bumps his head when he hits the ground, too?
- 8 A Yes, sir.
- 9 Q And you all have an argument over that?
- 10 A Yes, sir.
- 11 Q But you don't do anything about it, do you?
- 12 A No, sir.
- 13 Q Lastly Mr. Verner said he opened the door to talk about
- 14 something in North Carolina.
- 15 A Yes, sir.
- 16 Q I think first you testified to -- about when **Minor** was
- 17 taking from Theia. What are you talking about?
- 18 A The one incident that I know of that he was taken was
- 19 whenever I first initially met her. I hadn't known **Minor**
- 20 that long at that point in time. May have been like maybe
- 21 two weeks whenever I first initially met **Minor** But
- 22 during that course --
- 23 Q Don't -- don't go into all that. Just tell us what
- 24 happened to cause **Minor** to be taken.
- 25 A She smacked him for breaking four cigarettes of her --

1 four Newport cigarettes of hers. She slapped him across the
2 face with an open hand, and then continued to smack him on
3 his behind and his back while he was screaming and crying.
4 I wasn't the only one who witnessed this. Makayla also
5 witnessed this as well. And --

6 Q And did Justin Madore witness this?

7 A Justin Madore was informed about this and he called
8 DSS, as well as Megan Cody. And --

9 Q Megan Cody witnessed that?

10 A Megan Cody was also -- she didn't witness this, but she
11 was informed of what happened as well. But she's been a
12 witness to other incidents that have happened with **Minor**
13 and --

14 Q And when was this incident, smacking **Minor** in the
15 face for breaking cigarettes? When was this?

16 A This was back in 2013. I do not remember the exact
17 date.

18 Q Does April 23rd, 2013 sound about right?

19 A It sounds about right. Yes, sir.

20 Q And how old would **Minor** have been?

21 A **Minor** would have been around one. Less -- well, not
22 even around one at that time, in all honesty, I don't think.

23 Q He would have been a little over one-years-old?

24 One-year-old?

25 A Yes, sir.

1 Q Barely able to walk and talk?

2 A He wasn't walking or talking at that time really.

3 Q Right.

4 A Yes, sir.

5 Q Or not even, right, you say?

6 A Yes, sir.

7 Q Not even or barely is fair to say at that age? Not
8 even?

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q And so, that was the incident that opened up the DSS --
11 North Carolina DSS investigation?

12 A Yes, it is. DSS was called because of that. And also
13 they reported it about the bed. The child waking up eating
14 his own feces. Her beating on him. Him being in the room
15 with two adults while they were having sex and a gun being
16 underneath the mattress.

17 Q Okay. And eventually was Ms. McArdle arrested by the
18 Asheville Police Department?

19 A Yes, sir. Arrested twice. One time she was on the run
20 and they finally caught her. And another time they came to
21 a hotel where we were at and --

22 Q Just be -- you don't have to elaborate. Just answer
23 the question directly. Was she arrested for that incident?

24 A Yes, sir. She was.

25 Q She was child with misdemeanor child abuse in North

- 1 Carolina?
- 2 A Yes, sir.
- 3 Q She was convicted of that?
- 4 A Yes, sir.
- 5 Q And that was the reason North Carolina DSS took her
- 6 child away from her?
- 7 A Yes, sir. And put him in kinship.
- 8 Q But she eventually regained custody of him, correct?
- 9 A Yes, sir. Under stipulations, as least.
- 10 Q And that's why you all left North Carolina, right?
- 11 Once she got him back?
- 12 A She wanted to leave because a young individually that
- 13 she met named Ms. Brie -- or I don't know what her full name
- 14 is. It's Brie, convinced her to go to Spartanburg because
- 15 she could make more money selling herself. And she wanted
- 16 to leave North Carolina due to those incidents that happened
- 17 as well.
- 18 Q She didn't tell you she wanted to escape North Carolina
- 19 because of all the drama?
- 20 A Yeah. She said she wanted to get away from all the
- 21 drama because she has a record and she can't get a job and
- 22 she can't work. She just had people calling DSS on her and
- 23 calling her a bad parent, and her --
- 24 Q She's running from North Carolina DSS?
- 25 A Yes, sir.

RICHARD BOWMAN: RECROSS-EXAMINATION

679

1 Q She wanted a fresh start?

2 A Yes, sir.

3 Q So she regains custody of Minor about when?

4 A Only in August, I believe. Around June, August. And
5 then we immediately ended up moving down to Spartanburg.

6 But it was under stipulations that she --

7 Q Stop. Just --

8 A I'm sorry.

9 Q Just answer the questions.

10 A Sorry.

11 Q When did she get -- just tell me approximately when she
12 regained custody. The day and the year.

13 A It was 2014, August or June timeframe. One of those
14 two days -- months.

15 Q And she initially loses custody of him in spring of
16 2013?

17 A Yes, sir.

18 Q And then she regains custody of them in the summer of
19 2014?

20 A Yes, sir.

21 Q A few months later he's dead?

22 A Yes, sir.

23 MR. DANIEL: I don't have further questions, Your
24 Honor.

25

RECROSS-EXAMINATION

1 BY MR. VERNER:

2 Q You've had access to all the DSS files in North
3 Carolina, haven't you?

4 A Yes, sir.

5 Q There was an incident while you were with Theia in
6 April of 2013 where she slapped **Minor** for breaking
7 cigarettes?

8 A Yes, sir.

9 Q You were with her at the time?

10 A Yes, sir.

11 Q DSS investigated. She went through a treatment plan,
12 and they returned the child to Theia. But then you moved in
13 and DSS took the child again?

14 A I was already moved in at the time. And they did not
15 return **Minor** What they did do is they told her that she
16 would be under watching terms, and the person that they had
17 her being watched by did not want to watch her because she
18 said by herself that she needed -- Ms. McArdle did not
19 deserve to have her child due to the things she was doing to
20 her child.

21 Q And the fact that they considered you violent and
22 wouldn't give her the child back and you all were living
23 together didn't play a part in that?

24 A The reason why they considered me violent was due to
25 the fact of a previous incident that happened. The whole --

1 when she punched me in the eye and the strangulation. That
2 was one incident.

3 Q And the reason she didn't hit **Minor** like she hit you,
4 because **Minor** wasn't threatening her with a knife or choking
5 her out? You were?

6 A She did hit **Minor** like she hit me. He had a mark on
7 his face. I have the picture right here. I'm pretty sure
8 it's inside your motion as well, from the mark that he took.

9 Q I'm sure the prosecution can introduce anything that
10 they think is relevant. Let's go to this -- the Solicitor
11 had you read your Facebook quote on December 19th?

12 A Yes, sir.

13 Q It says, you got him, so act right.

14 A Yes.

15 Q That's basically, you left. You took him. You got
16 him. And that's when she left you. Her mother took them
17 away from you. And you wrote an angry post on your Facebook
18 saying, well, you got him. Now act right.

19 A No.

20 Q That's what that means, doesn't it?

21 A No. What I was saying is, you had him returned back to
22 you. Stop beating on him and act right. Stop being a
23 prostitute and everything else if you're so concerned for
24 your child.

25 Q So you got him doesn't mean you took him away?

1 A No.

2 Q Okay. May 2014 is actually when **Minor** came back.

3 Would you dispute that the records show that May of 2014 was
4 when the child was returned?

5 A I thought it was between August and June timeframe.

6 I'm really not sure when he officially came back. I know
7 whenever she officially, officially got him back and I saw
8 him we were living in hotels and we did eventually move down
9 to North Carolina. He was still in Janice's care around May
10 time because she did not want to deal with him, because she
11 was doing the whole prostitution ordeal, and doing drugs as
12 well at that time as well.

13 Q Now, you told the prosecutor just a few minutes ago
14 that you saw her him on the 27th, right?

15 A Yes, sir.

16 Q But that's when you all went to Asheville to visit her
17 mother, right?

18 A Yes, sir.

19 Q But then you had mistakenly thought that that was the
20 court date, right?

21 A Yes, sir.

22 Q And then the 28th is when you said she hit him in the
23 groin at David Maroochi, or whatever his name's house is,
24 right?

25 A Moscerelli, yes, sir.

1 Q Who was conveniently in the kitchen and didn't see it
2 and wouldn't have heard, or you wouldn't have been able to
3 tell him about that?

4 A He heard crying.

5 Q You think if he had seen that he'd be here? You think
6 from Laurens County they would not have had him in here to
7 court?

8 A Well, there's a lot of people that weren't subpoenaed
9 in the motion of discovery, so I'm not sure.

10 Q That's right. There are amazingly a lot of people who
11 weren't subpoenaed to corroborate what you're saying. You
12 told the prosecutor just a second ago that **Minor** started
13 vomiting about 5:00 that day?

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q Just about a couple of minutes ago?

16 A Yes, sir.

17 Q But you also told us earlier this week that you
18 normally eat dinner -- that you estimated you ate dinner
19 with **Minor** between 6:00 and 8:00?

20 A And she started cooking dinner around 5:00 or whatnot.
21 And he ended up vomiting while we were eating. He didn't
22 finish everything.

23 Q So he vomited before Theia even made dinner?

24 A No. She was cooking at the time and he had ate. While
25 we were eating dinner.

1 Q And the Solicitor said that you seemed to have
2 forgotten about when she hit him in the stomach because you
3 didn't testify to that yesterday, right?

4 A Yes, sir. And I explained to the Solicitor it wasn't a
5 matter of trying to protect anybody. I was honestly
6 nervous. I still am nervous. I've not done this before.

7 Q Is it possible that you had forgotten about that
8 because you have given so many stories you forgot that you
9 -- that's one of the stories you had said?

10 A No, sir.

11 Q And then you also forgot about this incident to testify
12 yesterday about this incident involving the computer
13 because, again, that is just one of the many pages of
14 stories that you've given that didn't happen and you forgot
15 to mention it. And he reminded you, well, didn't you
16 mention that?

17 A No, sir. It wasn't due to many pages of stories I
18 said. I'm actually nervous.

19 Q I understand that. And you've just given so many
20 stories that you can't remember which ones you've given
21 before and which ones you've retracted, right?

22 A Yes, sir.

23 Q I believe you testified, or you told the Solicitors you
24 don't like DSS; is that right?

25 A I said I didn't like them trying to take her child and

1 everything instead of trying to help her.

2 Q I think you told the Solicitor that DSS has a bad habit
3 of blaming you for things. If I could, page 73. Read for
4 me what you told the Solicitor about whether you like DSS.

5 A (Reading transcript)

6 Q And that's one of the times that you said I just don't
7 trust DSS because they tend to blame me?

8 A What I did state is DSS -- as it says right here, DSS
9 tried to get on me, too, for that situation and I had
10 nothing to do with it. I didn't strike the child or do
11 anything. DSS was getting onto me because I didn't place a
12 call to them reporting what happened. It says that right
13 there, too.

14 Q And you also told the prosecutor when you met with them
15 that you couldn't hear her hurting Minor because you were
16 wearing your earphones listening to music?

17 A I said I heard a noise and I ended up taking my
18 earphone out. I didn't have it in all the way. I didn't
19 hear everything that happened. I only heard a bit piece of
20 it. I heard a quick like yell or loud noise and I went to
21 go see what happened.

22 Q You couldn't hear anything until you took your earphone
23 out and then you heard it?

24 A Yes, sir.

25 Q Do you remember what music you were listening to?

1 A Yes, sir.

2 Q You do? Tell me.

3 A It was a song I've actually sang while I've been in
4 jail this whole time. It's by I See Stars. It's called
5 Airplane.

6 MR. VERNER: Thank you.

7 THE COURT: All right, sir. You may step down.

8 (Whereupon, the witness stepped down from the witness
9 stand.)

10 THE COURT: Ladies and gentlemen, this is a good point
11 for a break. If you want to step outside, feel free to do
12 so. So discuss the case. I want to talk briefly with the
13 attorneys about where we stand. I think your next witness
14 should be here?

15 MR. STUMBO: Yes, sir.

16 THE COURT: It's the one we were discussing, the doctor
17 or --

18 MR. STUMBO: Actually we have a shorter lay-witness,
19 which will be the mother, first and then I think we can get
20 done with that one fairly quickly.

21 THE COURT: Very good. Take a break. Don't talk about
22 it. See you back in a few moments. Thank.

23 (Whereupon, the jury exited the courtroom at 10:41
24 a.m.)

25 THE COURT: Did you all work out a stipulation with

PATRICE MCARDLE: DIRECT EXAMINATION

687

1 DNA?

2 MR. VERNER: Not stipulation. But I'm agreeing that
3 they lay the foundation for the -- I don't want to be
4 accused of stipulating anything, but they've served the
5 notice of foundation.

6 MR. STUMBO: Right.

7 THE COURT: We don't need the analyst or we do need the
8 analyst?

9 MR. VERNER: I think they've already released him, so
10 we're not --

11 MR. STUMBO: Well, we sent him to Columbia. They can
12 get back here quickly. But it's my understanding if Chief
13 McClurken can -

14 MR. VERNER: They already served the notice 10 days
15 before trial of what they intended to introduce.

16 MR. STUMBO: We attended to just introduce the SLED
17 reports through the Chief --

18 THE COURT: Chief McClurken.

19 MR. STUMBO: -- as part of their investigative file.
20 Yes, sir.

21 THE COURT: That will be perfect. All right. Let's be
22 at ease for a few moments.

23 (Whereupon, a recess was held from 10:41 a.m. to 11:02
24 a.m.)

25 THE COURT: We should go back on the record. Let's

1 have the jury out, please.

2 (Whereupon, the jury entered the courtroom at 11:02
3 a.m.)

4 THE COURT: The record will reflect the jury is back
5 and seated. At this point, Solicitor, please call your
6 next witness.

7 MR. DANIEL: Thank you, Your Honor, the State calls
8 Patrice McArdle.

9 PATRICE MCARDLE, having first been
10 duly sworn, testified as follows:

11 DIRECT EXAMINATION

12 BY MR. DANIEL:

13 Q Ms. McArdle, where are you from?

14 A I'm from Canton, North Carolina.

15 Q Speak up, Ms. McArdle.

16 A Canton, North Carolina.

17 Q Say that town again?

18 A Canton, C-a-n-t-o-n.

19 Q Canton, North Carolina?

20 A Yes.

21 Q That's in the mountains?

22 A Yes, it is.

23 Q How far from Newberry is that?

24 A It is about 85 miles, maybe 90.

25 MR. VERNER: I apologize. I'm still struggling to her

PATRICE MCARDLE: DIRECT EXAMINATION

689

1 Ms. McArdle.

2 THE COURT: Ms. McArdle, why don't you just step back a
3 little bit from the microphones. Speak a little bit louder.
4 Okay?

5 THE WITNESS: Okay.

6 Q Okay. And what do you do for a living?

7 A I'm a staff accountant at Carolina Alliance Bank.

8 Q Do you have any children?

9 A Yes, I do.

10 Q Who are your children?

11 A Theia Darion McArdle.

12 Q Theia McArdle?

13 A Yes.

14 Q Seated right there?

15 A Yes.

16 Q Is that your only child?

17 A Yes.

18 Q And do you have any grandkids?

19 A Yes, I did.

20 Q You did?

21 A Yes, I did.

22 Q Minor

23 A Yes.

24 Q Who died on December 30th, 2014?

25 A Yes, he did.

1 Q And were you in **Minor's** life?

2 A Yes, but not as much as I would like to have been.

3 Q And for the first, what, couple of his life he was
4 closer to you? Living closer to you, correct?

5 A Yes. I lived with Theia and **Minor** from the time that
6 he was born until October of 2012.

7 Q So you did live with him for a little bit?

8 A Yes, I did.

9 Q And so, you were here for the testimony of Richard
10 Bowman, correct?

11 A Yes, I was.

12 Q So you understand the things we discussed and the
13 history that they were in Asheville and then how they came
14 to Spartanburg, correct?

15 A Yes.

16 Q And did you know that your daughter was working as a
17 prostitute?

18 A She had told me, but I didn't believe her.

19 Q Did you express concerns about this kind of lifestyle?

20 A I didn't believe her. But I told her, I said, if you
21 are, that's a very dangerous lifestyle. But she told me
22 other things that she was engaging in as well with Richard
23 that I didn't approve of either and I expressed my opinion.
24 And she's a grown person, so I didn't have any control over
25 it.

PATRICE MCARDLE: DIRECT EXAMINATION

691

1 Q So Theia told you she was working as a prostitute, you
2 just didn't believe her?

3 A No, I didn't.

4 Q Well, I'm going to fast-forward to when is the -- when
5 is the last time you saw Minor alive?

6 A That was Saturday, December 27th, 2014.

7 Q Saturday, December 27th, 2014 --

8 A Yes.

9 Q -- was the last time you saw Minor

10 A Yes.

11 Q And you saw Minor with his mom as well, with Theia?

12 A Yes, and Richard came along.

13 Q Where did you all -- where did you meet?

14 A At Malvern Hills Park in West Asheville, North
15 Carolina.

16 Q So you all met up at a park in Asheville?

17 A Yes, Malvern Hills.

18 Q Were you all exchanging Christmas presents?

19 A It was combination Christmas and his birthday.

20 Q So early birthday?

21 A Yes.

22 Q What did you get him for Christmas slash birthday?

23 A For Christmas I got him a VTech computer and for his
24 birthday I got him roller skates, and the skates came with
25 pads and a helmet.

1 Q And **Minor** tried out those skates in front of you at
2 the park that day?

3 A He did. Yes. I put them on him myself, and all the
4 pads first. And then his helmet. And then we helped him
5 skate around some.

6 Q Was he able to maintain his balance or did he fall a
7 little bit?

8 A He fell a little bit. You know, we -- his mother and I
9 had a hold of him, you know, one on each, holding up like
10 this, and he was balancing more and more. And then when he
11 fell close to where the -- Malvern Hills has a pavilion
12 where you can skate, and here's the red clay mud, and this
13 is where he fell. Where some red clay mud came onto the
14 concrete. And he did something to either this finger or
15 this finger. But he said, owe, my hand, you know. So Theia
16 and I just got him back up and we said, you know, you've
17 just got to keep on going. It's fine. And Richard made a
18 show of kissing his hand, and I thought there's no way I
19 would do that because it's red clay mud and it's right near
20 a trash can.

21 Q So Richard was kissing his hand, like kissing a booboo,
22 like adults do to kids?

23 A Yes.

24 Q So it's kind of a display of affection by Richard to
25 **Minor**

PATRICE MCARDLE: DIRECT EXAMINATION

693

1 A I thought it was an overly inappropriate display. I
2 think he was just trying to get across that he had some kind
3 of good feelings for my -- for my grandson. I never liked
4 Richard. I told my daughter that many, many times.

5 Q But Theia considered Richard **Minor's** father figure.
6 The only father figure he's ever known, correct?

7 A That's what I've heard here.

8 Q Theia's never told you that?

9 A No.

10 Q Really? Okay. So he's trying his roller skates. You
11 said he had on a helmet, pad, all that for protection?

12 A He sure did.

13 Q And he fell a little bit but not injuries?

14 A Yes.

15 Q Wait. Yes or no to the injuries? Did he have --

16 A He did not have any injuries. I mean, he like -- I
17 think he jammed maybe one of his joints or -- I don't really
18 know. But he didn't make any more fuss about it. He got
19 back up and skated some. And then I realized that I put the
20 skates on the wrong feet, because they're the ones that
21 strap onto your shoes. And so, I sat him down and reached
22 around him and put the skates on the right feet.

23 Q Did you observe any injuries that day on **Minor**

24 A No.

25 Q Did he appear healthy?

1 A Yes.

2 Q Happy?

3 A Yes. The sun shining. He sat right beside me in the
4 sunshine. It was a very arm day for the end of December.
5 It was about 55 maybe.

6 Q And tell me just generally, was **Minor** an energetic
7 kid, low energy? I mean --

8 A He was pretty steady energy. I don't think he had
9 nearly as much energy as Theia had when she was his age.
10 But --

11 Q Was he a talkative kid? Was he able to talk?

12 A Yeah. He was really good at expressing himself.

13 Q So did you -- anything out of the ordinary when you saw
14 him December 27th?

15 A No.

16 Q You all had lunch that day or something?

17 A We did. I brought pizza, they brought the sodas, and
18 we sat down. You know, I gave Theia her gift, and **Minor**
19 his gifts and his card. And we went to play at the little
20 play area which is just up from the pavilion.

21 Q But you did see **Minor** eat lunch that day?

22 A Yes. He ate plenty of pizza.

23 Q So he wasn't sick, vomiting, anything like that at any
24 point?

25 A No. He also --

PATRICE MCARDLE: DIRECT EXAMINATION

695

1 Q Did he complain of any pain in his abdomen?

2 A No.

3 Q Groin?

4 A No.

5 Q And did you observe any injuries whatsoever --

6 A No.

7 Q -- aside from the skate injuries?

8 A No. He did fine. He had a great time. And we went to
9 McDonald's afterwards and Theia and I and **Minor** went in
10 and he had Sundaes. And he was just giggling and he was
11 like -- I remember he was curled up on the seat itself with
12 his little hoodie that fell over and he was just giggling
13 away just like he would do. Just like any three-year-old
14 would do when they have a fit of giggles.

15 Q Did you ever observe, and it's been testified to
16 already, about **Minor** having her son taken away from her?
17 Losing custody of him in North Carolina?

18 A She did. I think it was in April. I don't remember
19 the exact date, in 2013. And I heard that she struck him
20 across his face. And so, she began classes. She also went
21 for a mental health evaluation to make sure she was
22 up-to-date on her meds, because she is medically disabled
23 and she is bipolar, and --

24 Q You said that causes mood swings, bipolar?

25 A Not just that. But with hers it's been confirmed

1 through two different EKGs she has random slowing of her
2 theta waves in the back of her brain, which causes --
3 bipolar disorder is a medical condition. And it is my
4 understanding through various psychiatrists whose gone over
5 this with me, that it's a lot like epilepsy. Seizures in
6 the brain where --

7 Q We don't have to go into all of it, but --

8 A Well, that was part of her --

9 Q Well, let me ask you the next question. So you all had
10 lunch together. He skates that day, December 27th?

11 A Yes.

12 Q So how long did you visit with him that day?

13 A Well, it was a couple of hours. And then they left
14 about 2:00 or 2:30.

15 Q I'm going to fast-forward. Did you hear from your
16 daughter? When's the next time you hear from your daughter,
17 see your daughter, what, after December 27th?

18 A She called me the night of December 28th, it was a
19 Sunday. And she and **Minor** had gone from Walmart and she
20 said she needed to get away from Richard. And she had I had
21 discussed many times how she was trying to get away from him
22 and go to be with Poppy. And she and **Minor** were at
23 Walmart and she gave him the phone to talk with me, like she
24 always did, and he was talking with me but he was also
25 chattering and singing. He loved to sing to himself. So he

PATRICE MCARDLE: DIRECT EXAMINATION

697

1 was busy with that.

2 Q So she calls you on the phone December 28th --

3 A Yes.

4 Q -- and you talk to Theia and **Minor** on the phone?

5 A Yes. About 35 minutes.

6 Q And tell us after December -- after that phone call on
7 December 28th when's the next time you hear from your
8 daughter?

9 A That was the morning of **Minor's** birthday -- or what
10 would have been his third birthday.

11 Q So you're talking about the early morning hours of
12 December 30th?

13 A Right.

14 Q You receive a phone call from Theia?

15 A I did. I want to say it was 10 or so until 2:00. And
16 she said I'm about ready to go in here, and they're going to
17 try to resuscitate him. I need you to wake up because, you
18 know, I need you, and they may not be able to resuscitate
19 him. He has asphyxiated.

20 Q She said -- Theia told you he asphyxiated?

21 A Yes. Said that he had vomited and then aspirated and
22 then just choked.

23 Q Where had he vomited? Where -- what location did she
24 say **Minor** vomited?

25 A First of all, during that phone call she said he was in

1 the bed and Richard went to check on him. And so, my
2 question to her was why would Richard do that, because in my
3 mind [Minor's] bedroom was over here. Their bedroom was
4 over here. Here was [Minor's] bathroom, and here was the
5 livingroom and kitchen. I've only been in that place once.

6 Q So Theia had told you that [Minor] had vomited in his
7 bed --

8 A Yes.

9 Q -- in Enoree?

10 A Yes.

11 Q And that Richard went to check on him in his bed?

12 A Yes. And then he tried to resuscitate him but he
13 wasn't able to, so they came to the emergency room.

14 Q Where? What emergency room?

15 A In Newberry.

16 Q Have you ever heard of Newberry?

17 A I've never heard of it.

18 Q And did you question why they -- how they ended up at
19 the Newberry ER?

20 A I did. But I said -- my question was why was Richard
21 even anywhere near [Minor's] room because he had beaten on
22 Theia so very badly, and he had been so controlling of her
23 and I was very suspicious. And that boy was healthy as a
24 horse. I didn't have any life insurance on him simply
25 because he was so healthy. I mean, what was the point. He

PATRICE MCARDLE: DIRECT EXAMINATION

699

1 was going to live a very long life.

2 Q Minor wasn't prone to eat food and vomit?

3 A No.

4 Q Acid reflux, anything like that?

5 A No. And he could eat almost anything. He would even
6 eat Greek salad. He would eat the little peppers that were
7 --

8 Q So he had a strong stomach?

9 A Oh, yeah.

10 Q So it would be really unusual for him to vomit?

11 A It would be very unusual. And, you know, to aspirate
12 it like that, I mean, I didn't expect it. I said this
13 doesn't make any sense.

14 Q Is she crying, hysterical at this time?

15 A No. She sounded -- to me she sounded like she was
16 either angry with me or that she was desperate for me to
17 believe what she was trying to tell me.

18 Q And this was around -- you said around 2:00 a.m.?

19 A It's about 10 until 2:00.

20 Q So 1:50 a.m. on December 30th?

21 A Somewhere around that.

22 Q So she calls you and says Minor's -- we're at the
23 Newberry ER. They're trying to resuscitate him but they
24 might not be able to?

25 A She's like I'm about to go in here and they may tell me

1 that my child is dead.

2 Q Anything else significant about this particular
3 conversation?

4 A That was about it. And she said I need to go so I can
5 go talk with the doctor.

6 Q Did she call back, or you call her back? Did you all
7 talk again?

8 A The next person who called me was Dr. Holaday, and that
9 was about -- I want to say 12 minutes after.

10 Q Dr. Duncan Holaday who testified on Tuesday?

11 A The ER doctor, yeah.

12 Q He called you?

13 A Yes, he did.

14 Q How did he -- how did he get your information?

15 A I guess Theia gave it to him.

16 Q And why did he want to talk to you?

17 A He said that he -- he started off by saying, you know,
18 I'm sorry to have to have this conversation with you but,
19 you know, your grandson -- he started telling me they
20 brought him in. This boy has asphyxiated, and he went
21 through almost exactly what Theia was trying to tell me.
22 And I --

23 Q Asphyxiated just means you don't have any oxygen.
24 You're deprived of oxygen really.

25 A And he said that he had aspirated the vomit and stopped

PATRICE MCARDLE: DIRECT EXAMINATION

701

1 breathing and they tried to revive him. And I don't
2 remember all the medical terms that he used. But that's
3 when I finally said, look, can you do an autopsy, can you do
4 a scan, are there any bruises, because --

5 Q Why did you ask him that? He's the doctor. Wouldn't
6 he know?

7 A Because he was telling me the story that my daughter
8 had told me that I didn't believe, and I was suspicious
9 because of what Richard had done to Theia. And I had
10 expressed to Theia, I said, this guy is so dangerous you
11 need to get away from him.

12 Q But isn't that true though, that Theia has assaulted
13 Richard and been charged for assaulting Richard as well?
14 That they -- in other words, it was a toxic relationship on
15 both parties, correct?

16 A It probably was. And I have urged her many times over
17 the years to get away from him.

18 Q And I'm not disputing Richard may have hit Theia. But
19 it was toxic, correct?

20 A All I know is I've had to come and get her and help her
21 on more than one occasion.

22 Q But yet Richard was a babysitter for Minor correct?

23 A I know. I never approved. But what can I do. It's
24 her own free will, and I can't -- I didn't even know where
25 they lived in Enoree until December 12th.

1 Q Going back to that conversation with Dr. Holaday. You
2 asked him to perform an autopsy or something? You asked him
3 about bruises?

4 A I said is there something -- see if there are any
5 bruises, anything. Because he was just going down the line.
6 Well, he just -- you know, he breathed in his vomit. He's
7 dead, he's gone, I'm so sorry, and that's it. And I was
8 like, no, you need to look at this. Look at it further.
9 Can you do an autopsy. I've never had somebody call me like
10 that and be the one to be responsible enough to say I want
11 further testing. My mind has absolutely been blown away.

12 Q What time did Dr. Holaday call you approximately?

13 A It was about 2:12.

14 Q So you hear from him first that **Minor** was officially
15 pronounced dead, correct?

16 A Yes.

17 Q Did he call from Theia's cell phone number?

18 A No. And Theia did not call from her cell phone number
19 either. It was a number that I didn't recognize. It was a
20 completely different area code.

21 Q Were you expressing disbelief to Theia when she told
22 you **Minor** was in the ER?

23 A I said, well, I don't know. I mean, I can pray. But,
24 you know, what happened. And then she told me the whole
25 thing. Started to tell me and I was like why would he go in

1 Minor's room. Why would he have any business of just
2 suddenly going in and checking on Minor

3 Q And so, you found it so odd that a kid with a strong
4 stomach would have vomited in his bed?

5 A Absolutely.

6 Q And not been able to make it to the toilet?

7 A That's exactly right.

8 Q So did Theia tell Dr. Holaday to talk to you to confirm
9 her story?

10 A I don't know. He called me on his own I believe.

11 Q And that was about 2:12 a.m.?

12 A Yes.

13 Q Did you talk to Theia? So that was the extent of your
14 conversation with Dr. Holaday, correct?

15 A Yes.

16 Q Did you talk to Theia again after you talked with Dr.
17 Holaday?

18 A Let me say that Dr. Holaday was there any history of
19 abuse and I told him that Theia was on the verge of leaving
20 Richard, and that I was on standby to come down and help her
21 move. You know, her and Minor into Poppy's house. But he
22 said we had state of the art pathology department here even
23 though we're a small town and he did go on like that. And
24 that's when I think he got really, really serious. And in
25 the background of that call I could hear Richard trying to

1 tell the same story that Theia was telling to whoever he was
2 talking to.

3 Q So Dr. Holaday was assuring you that somebody would
4 examine --

5 A Yes.

6 Q -- Minor and determine the cause of death?

7 A Yes.

8 Q After that do you hear from Theia again in any way?

9 A Yes, I do. I do.

10 Q She called you or you call her or what?

11 A She called me a few minutes later and she seemed very
12 angry.

13 Q Angry or upset?

14 A She was upset. And upset. But anyway, she was like,
15 "Mom, you know, this happens all the time." And I told her,
16 I said, "I've never heard of this happening before."

17 Q What happens all the time?

18 A The aspiration of his vomit and his dying. And I said
19 this boy is so strong -- I mean, he would climb anything,
20 just like most three-year-olds. He had physical strength to
21 -- if he was really sick -- if he were really sick in his
22 bed vomiting massively, or even partially, he could get up
23 and go. There's no reason why he should have just laid
24 there and just died.

25 Q Theia didn't tell you Richard knocked Minor out --

PATRICE MCARDLE: DIRECT EXAMINATION

705

- 1 A No.
- 2 Q -- and was beating on him in the backseat of the car --
- 3 A No.
- 4 Q -- and knocked him into the bathtub?
- 5 A No.
- 6 Q Theia didn't tell you any of this?
- 7 A No. And no one else did either.
- 8 Q She just said he -- **Minor** had vomited in his bed and
- 9 Richard tried to revive him?
- 10 A Exactly. Oh, and another thing that the doctor told
- 11 me. He said they were traveling during the night going
- 12 through Newberry and the child vomited and aspirated in his
- 13 -- regurgitation and that's how he died.
- 14 Q So the doctor told you that they had told the doctor
- 15 that --
- 16 A They were traveling during the night through Newberry.
- 17 Q -- he had gotten sick in the car?
- 18 A Yes.
- 19 Q But Theia told you he had gotten sick in Enoree?
- 20 A Yes.
- 21 Q So she sounded angry on the phone?
- 22 A Yes.
- 23 Q And she said this is just something that -- what was
- 24 the --
- 25 A It was -- she was saying this is something that happens

1 all the time. You know, like I had a problem. I didn't
2 understand. What's the deal. And I was furious, you know.
3 And I just -- I just said I've got to go. I've got to go.
4 And then I just cried and cried. And I just said to myself,
5 **Minor** what did they do to you. What did they do to you.
6 And, you know, I found out from the deputy coroner when I
7 finally came down on the 31st, some of it. The rest of it I
8 found out just this week.

9 Q And I know this is -- I can't even imagine how
10 difficult this is for you and I'm not going to pretend that
11 I know how you feel. So what time -- the last conversation
12 with Theia that you just described, what time was that
13 approximately?

14 A I want to say it was just a few minutes after I got off
15 the phone with Dr. Holaday.

16 Q So around 2:30 or -- 2:30 a.m.?

17 A I would say it was even before 2:30. Because his phone
18 call did not last that long, because he was anxious to get
19 off once I asked him, you know, please -- I mean, I was
20 desperate myself. I wanted to know what happened to my
21 grandson. Who did this.

22 Q And you felt like Theia was telling you --

23 A Oh, absolutely not. And I was so angry.

24 Q Tell us the next time you heard from Theia. Did you
25 hear from her again after this?

PATRICE MCARDLE: DIRECT EXAMINATION

707

1 A I think she finally called me collect, I want to say it
2 was almost two weeks later.

3 Q Two weeks later?

4 A Maybe a week and a half to two weeks. I don't have the
5 cell phone records. I'm just going by my memory.

6 Q She calls you two weeks later?

7 A Correct.

8 Q January 2015 at that point.

9 A Yes.

10 Q Was that from the jail?

11 A Yes. And I accepted just one collect call to tell her
12 I want to know who killed my grandson, and I didn't say it
13 that nicely. And I said, you know, there's no Richard tried
14 to revive him. There's no he choked on is vomit and
15 aspirated and just asphyxiated like that and died. That
16 doesn't -- that's not what happened to him. Somebody beat
17 him to death, and I want to know who killed my grandson.
18 And you need to tell what you know, or you're going to spend
19 the rest of your life in jail, or maybe just -- I don't
20 know. Maybe they'll give you the death penalty.

21 Q You told her all that?

22 A Yes, I did. And I was so angry.

23 Q And at that point she told you Richard did it?

24 A I don't remember what she said, except that I need to
25 believe in her innocence. All along it's like you need to

1 believe me that I didn't do this. I couldn't do this to my
2 son.

3 Q But she never gave you any real specifics other than he
4 was sick?

5 A Huh-uh. That's it.

6 Q Are you friends with your daughter? Do you have a
7 Facebook account?

8 A I do.

9 Q Are you friends -- or were you friends with your
10 daughter on Facebook at the time of this?

11 A I was and I still am. I just don't get on Facebook
12 anymore really.

13 Q What's your daughter's Facebook account? Is it under
14 her real name or does she use an alias?

15 A Yeah, she does use an alias, but then the address bar
16 it always says the real name. So it says the address is --
17 bar is Theia D. McArdle.

18 Q What was her alias?

19 A Sally Daniels.

20 Q Sally Daniels?

21 A Uh-huh.

22 Q How did she come up with that?

23 A I have no idea. She never did answer that question. I
24 was like, why would you call yourself that.

25 Q Did she -- did she have Internet on her phone? Did she

PATRICE MCARDLE: DIRECT EXAMINATION

709

1 have a Smart Phone?

2 A Yes.

3 Q So she had that Facebook app and she would get on
4 Facebook on the phone and all that?

5 A Yes.

6 Q Was she using Facebook at the time she's at the
7 hospital?

8 A Apparently so, because she made some posts.

9 Q I'm going to hand you what's been marked for ID
10 purposes as State's 148. This is State's 148. Do you
11 recognize this printout?

12 A Yes, I do.

13 Q What is that?

14 A This is when Theia posted at 2:33 a.m..

15 MR. DANIEL: Your Honor, I would offer State's 148 for
16 admission into evidence.

17 THE COURT: That's already been offered for admission.
18 I have not ruled on the other attachments involved in the
19 matter of the 403. We can argue that later. We just didn't
20 have a chance to do it last night. So subject to the 403
21 objection, I will give him parts of that. But let me -- let
22 me address -- do you intend to refer to all of photos again?

23 MR. DANIEL: No, sir. Actually, I told Mr. Verner.

24 MR. VERNER: What he showed me just a second ago I
25 don't have any objection to, which I think were the first

1 two pages of that.

2 MR. DANIEL: Yes, sir.

3 THE COURT: Very good.

4 MR. DANIEL: And, Your Honor, the first two pages, if
5 His Honor would like to see them.

6 THE COURT: If he has no objection, I have no need to
7 see it.

8 MR. DANIEL: Thank you, Your Honor.

9 Q So you recognize State's 148?

10 A I do.

11 Q And what is that?

12 A This is Theia's Facebook posts. A timeline. And
13 apparently she published that from her Smart Phone or
14 someone else's at 2:33 a.m., right after **Minor** had been
15 pronounced dead.

16 Q And you observed that posting that night?

17 A I did the next morning. Well, later in the morning at
18 about 6:30. I didn't have Wi-Fi at home, so I went down to
19 McDonald's to Wi-Fi.

20 MR. DANIEL: Permission to publish this, Your Honor.

21 THE COURT: You may as far as that post.

22 MR. DANIEL: Mr. Bentley, just this one.

23 Q And so, what we're looking at is Sally Daniels,
24 correct?

25 A Correct.

PATRICE MCARDLE: DIRECT EXAMINATION

711

1 Q With the Court's permission, if you could step down Ms.
2 McArdle, for just a second.

3 (Whereupon, the witness stepped down from the witness
4 stand.)

5 Q And please keep your voice up for Ms. Scott.

6 A Okay.

7 Q Point to the posting and read it out loud, please,
8 ma'am.

9 A "Rest in peace, Angel. Mommy will meet you in heaven
10 one day. Let Jesus, something, you until then."

11 Q Let Jesus keep you until then?

12 A Probably so.

13 Q Okay. It might be cut off by the printout. And what
14 time -- date and time was this posting?

15 A It's 2:33 a.m. It says yesterday here. So I don't see
16 a date stamp on here.

17 Q But you observed that when you woke up later that
18 morning on December 30th?

19 A Yes.

20 Q Okay. And she's posting that from the Newberry
21 hospital, correct?

22 A Yes, apparently so.

23 Q Because you talked to her around that same time?

24 A Yes. But not on her cell phone.

25 Q Not on -- but she had her cell phone?

1 A Apparently so, or she got some kind of Internet
2 connection.

3 Q So she's posting on Facebook just after she's learning
4 of the death of her son?

5 A Yes.

6 MR. DANIEL: And then the next page, Mr. Bentley.

7 Q And do you recall seeing this posting? I know it's cut
8 off from the printout.

9 A I do. And I don't -- I don't know exactly what the
10 time stamp is on this. But this was at 4:33 a.m. that same
11 morning.

12 Q If you could, read out the postings.

13 A Okay. This top one?

14 Q Start from the top, please.

15 A Okay. "I just got your message. I don't have the
16 messenger app on my phone so I have to wait until I check
17 my, period, FB on actual browser. Yes, I still want you to
18 claim us both. And as long as you have no more allegations
19 toward my parenting or BS abuse, which by the way was an
20 iron deficiency which **Minor** was not prescribed medication
21 has monthly labs for, you may call my phone --" this is a
22 new number she got. I didn't have contact with them for two
23 weeks.

24 Q That's an older posting, correct?

25 A Yeah.

PATRICE MCARDLE: DIRECT EXAMINATION

713

1 Q It looks to be -- I see it looks to be 12/20, around
2 December?

3 A I'm not really sure, to be completely honest, because
4 she contacted me in early December.

5 Q I'm sorry. Read the next posting.

6 A Okay. This is from 4:33 a.m. on 12/30.

7 Q Correct. My apologies. I looked at the wrong one.

8 A It's okay. "The police are searching my house and just
9 took my keys. I don't know if they are going to check my
10 car or not. If anything happens and you don't hear from me
11 in 24 hours, please get my clothes and valuables from my
12 house. Call James to help if needed, [REDACTED]. He will
13 be glad to. They may arrest for escort."

14 Q So that posting is 12/30 at 2:33 a.m.?

15 A At 4:33 a.m.

16 Q 4:33 a.m. My apologies. So she was still on her phone
17 a couple hours after her son was pronounced dead and she's
18 talking about the police searching her house?

19 A Yes. Do you want me to read mine next?

20 Q Yes, read -- and you posted at this time?

21 A Then I posted -- I went down to McDonald's to Wi-Fi,
22 because that's what I do. Wi-Fi for free because I want to
23 save money.

24 Q And is this posting later in the morning when you woke
25 up on --

1 A This is when I -- well, I was awake, but I finally went
2 down to McDonald's after crying for hours.

3 Q Read that posting, please.

4 A 6:36 a.m. "I've been trying to call you since just
5 after we got off the phone. How is it that you can post a
6 Facebook update but cannot answer my calls. I need to know
7 what happened. The hospital will only tell me that he
8 expired."

9 MR. DANIEL: You can have a seat, please ma'am.

10 (Whereupon, the witness returns to the witness stand.)

11 Q So that whole string of postings -- I'm sorry. It
12 looked like a 20 to me. But that was all from 12/30?

13 A Yes.

14 Q December 30th?

15 A Yes.

16 Q And you remember all those postings a few hours after
17 learning the death of your grandson?

18 A Yes.

19 Q And so, you seem to be put out with the fact that she's
20 Facebooking but yet not telling you what happened?

21 A It was just even more reason for me to be incredibly
22 livid with her. Furious.

23 Q So she's not giving you answers about the cause of her
24 son's death?

25 A No one's giving me any answers --

PATRICE MCARDLE: CROSS-EXAMINATION

715

1 Q But she's --

2 A -- especially not her.

3 Q But she's on Facebook talking about --

4 A Right.

5 Q -- unrelated matters?

6 A Right.

7 MR. DANIEL: No further questions. Please answer
8 anything Mr. Verner has.

9 THE COURT: Mr. Verner.

10 CROSS-EXAMINATION

11 BY MR. VERNER:

12 Q When you first heard about **Minor's** death --

13 A Yes.

14 Q -- you came to Newberry yourself?

15 A I came on December 31st.

16 Q The day after the death?

17 A Yes.

18 Q So would you have had to take off of work and make
19 arrangements to come from Asheville to --

20 A Yes.

21 Q And you had been to Theia's home in Enoree?

22 A Once.

23 Q Once?

24 A No, I'm sorry. Twice. Excuse me.

25 Q About how long of a drive is it from Enoree to

1 Asheville?

2 A It's probably less than Newberry. I want to say it's
3 about a couple hours drive, depending on how fast I go.

4 Q More than two?

5 A More than two?

6 Q Asheville is kind of in the middle of --

7 A Well, I'm coming from Black Mountain at that point in
8 time because that's where I was living. So it may have been
9 a little bit around two and a half.

10 Q So it's between two to three house --

11 A Yes.

12 Q -- each way then?

13 A Yes.

14 Q So if I wanted to drive from Enoree to visit you and
15 spend a Christmas day or a birthday with you, I would have
16 been on the road about five hours of the day both coming and
17 going?

18 A Probably so, yes.

19 Q And longer if I stop somewhere?

20 A Probably.

21 MR. VERNER: Mr. Bentley, may I have part two of number
22 233. The second page. Which one was -- is that 133 or 233?

23 THE COURT: That's 148, I think.

24 MR. VERNER: 148.

25 Q To me that looks like using the messenger service. But

1 is that actually on the Facebook account? It doesn't really
2 matter to me but I'm just -- are those direct messages or is
3 that on the --

4 A This is -- when you go onto Facebook and you pull it up
5 it can be messages or it can also be a chat if the person is
6 present at the same time. Or at least that's the way it was
7 then.

8 Q So the chat is like there are a bunch of your Facebook
9 friends are on kind of like the side of it and it'll be like
10 a green light will come up --

11 A Right.

12 Q -- or something like that?

13 A Right. And then whatever messages come up in a little
14 box on my laptop -- I don't know how it is -- I don't have a
15 Smart Phone. I have a very old phone, because I have a
16 laptop. I don't need a fancy phone.

17 Q Well, I'm on Facebook on my computer, too. So like a
18 little box will pop up --

19 A Right.

20 Q -- in the bottom right-hand corner?

21 A Right.

22 Q is that what those are?

23 A Yes. And it's -- that's taken from the message. I
24 pulled up my own Facebook account and got those.

25 Q So these were basically messages directly to you. They

1 weren't posted just on Facebook for the public? These were

2 --

3 A Yeah. This was directly to me.

4 Q And the first page where she said "My angel's dead. I
5 hope Jesus keeps him --"

6 A That was her Facebook feed for all to see.

7 Q That was a public posting?

8 A Yes. Yes.

9 Q But these were messages directly to you?

10 A That's exactly right.

11 Q And did you all often contact using the Facebook app?

12 A Sometimes we did.

13 Q I want to just make sure I'm clear. The top message,
14 that's a message from 12/30 or that's a message from earlier
15 that --

16 A That's from around the first week in December of 2014.

17 Q So she hadn't contacted you -- as I recall, Facebook
18 pretty much saves all your messages, even when they give you
19 new messages today you can scroll up and see older messages?

20 A Yes.

21 Q So there's really no Facebook direct messages between
22 you -- between early February -- early December and late
23 December?

24 A Right.

25 Q So it would have been telephone call or personal

PATRICE MCARDLE: CROSS-EXAMINATION

719

1 visits?

2 A That's exactly right.

3 Q The at that time that she -- at 2:33 in the morning

4 Theia thinks -- she indicates to you that she thinks she's
5 going to be arrested?

6 A Yes.

7 Q But at that time she thinks it's for prostitution?

8 A Yes.

9 Q There's no indication to you at that time, at least
10 from what she expresses to you, that she thinks she's going
11 to be arrested for harming Minor

12 A Yes.

13 Q Just so I know. Who have you met to discuss this case
14 with?

15 A I have met with Sergeant Allison Moore, Kellie Williams
16 and --

17 Q Kellie Williams would be the SLED Agent?

18 A Yes. And then Chief -- is it McClurky?

19 Q McClurken.

20 A I'm sorry. And then there was another gentleman in
21 there and I don't remember his name. He worked for the
22 police department, I thought. And then also the deputy
23 coroner.

24 Q And these were all on your own?

25 A Yes.

1 Q And I take it from your testimony you believe that
2 Theia is responsible for the beating death of Minor and
3 she should be punished for it?

4 A If she is responsible, yes. I think ever who -- even
5 if it involves both of them, I want them punished to the
6 fullest extent of the law.

7 Q And you've made that clear to law enforcement and to
8 Theia from the beginning?

9 A Yes, I have. I have not wavered.

10 Q Now, my understanding is you were Theia -- you were a
11 single mother to Theia?

12 A Yes.

13 Q How old was Theia before she was living on her own?

14 A She was 16.

15 Q Could she have been 17? 16, 17 range?

16 A Yeah.

17 Q How old was she when Minor was born?

18 A She was 18, I believe. Yes, she had just turned 18.

19 Q So she would have been pregnant at 17 --

20 A Right.

21 Q -- had the child at 18?

22 A Exactly.

23 Q Do you know where she was living when she was 17?

24 A She was living with Michael Brown out -- they had a
25 little rondette in north Asheville, and then when they got

PATRICE MCARDLE: CROSS-EXAMINATION

721

1 -- I don't know if they were thrown out or they just decided
2 to leave because of a dispute with the landlord, he and she
3 moved out to Leicester at a house off of Newfound. And I
4 came to pick her up on Christmas Eve of 2014 because she'd
5 had enough of Michael Brown. And I brought her to my home
6 on Aiken Street in Asheville at that time.

7 Q And then Michael Brown was replaced as a boyfriend by
8 Richard Bowman?

9 A Yes.

10 Q Did you know Richard Bowman when -- how long were they
11 together -- were Theia and Richard Bowman together when you
12 first met Richard?

13 A I want to say it was a couple of months. I mean, she
14 had told me about him when we were at Long Horn Steakhouse.
15 I want to say that was in maybe April. And I want to think
16 -- I want to say that it was in June that I first met him,
17 and Makayla, her friend. And **Minor** was along and we went
18 to Asheville Pizza and Brewing Company on Merrimon Avenue in
19 Asheville.

20 Q And by that time they were already living together?

21 A I presume so, yes.

22 Q Did she move into Richard's home or he moved into her
23 home?

24 A He moved into her home. She had an apartment in
25 Erskine that I paid the deposit on. I also gave her my

1 washer and dryer and all my furniture, except for a few
2 lamps. Yeah.

3 Q And Theia would have been about, what, 19, 20 at that
4 time?

5 A Let's see. That was in spring of 2013. I'm sorry.
6 Well -- yeah. It was still spring and early June.

7 Q And we know that Richard was coming out of six years of
8 military?

9 A That's what she told me.

10 Q But he moved in with her?

11 A Yes, he did.

12 Q Did you ever know him to work?

13 A No. She told me that he got a few jobs. Like one at
14 the Grove Park Inn and one at Walmart. But he was just done
15 in about a week or less.

16 Q Did you ever know -- did you know that Richard was also
17 an escort or a prostitute?

18 A No.

19 Q You saw **Minor** on December 27th?

20 A Yes, I did.

21 Q And that's when you had the picnic at the skating rink,
22 or the park?

23 A At Malvern Hills Park in west Asheville, yes.

24 Q And you said that **Minor** and Richard and Theia all
25 came together?

- 1 A Yes.
- 2 Q In which car?
- 3 A In Theia's Malibu.
- 4 Q Was that a fairly new car for Theia?
- 5 A It would for her. I think it was like a 2005 model.
- 6 Q Do you know how she got that Malibu?
- 7 A I bought it. I gave her the money to buy it and she
- 8 met with the lady. But I had to get back to Asheville so I
- 9 could go to my bank job the next morning.
- 10 Q But it was just a -- I'll call it a fairly cheap used
- 11 car?
- 12 A Yeah, it was a beater. I mean, I hate to use that
- 13 expression, but it really was like eight, \$900, you know.
- 14 Q Why did you have to buy her a -- didn't she have a
- 15 purple --
- 16 A She did. She had a Nissan Sentra and she told me -- do
- 17 you want the whole story about December 12th or just how she
- 18 acquired -- why she had to acquire a second car?
- 19 Q I just want to know why she had to acquire a second
- 20 car.
- 21 A Because he had disabled her car and locked her out of
- 22 not only the car but her house, and he had Minor inside
- 23 the trailer.
- 24 Q Well, did you just hear that from ear or did you come
- 25 -- do you have firsthand knowledge of that?

1 A She called me and told me, you know, he really hurt my
2 back. I'm hiding in the woods outside of my trailer. I
3 need you to come help me. So I left work and I came to --
4 and she's --

5 Q Do you remember what day that was?

6 A Yes. That was Friday, December the 12th, 2014. I'd
7 never been to her home before. I didn't even know where
8 they lived.

9 Q So that's the first time you'd ever come to Enoree?

10 A Yes.

11 Q And then what happened when you got to Enoree?

12 A I got to where her driveway is, and sure enough there
13 she was barefoot in the woods waiting for me. So she got in
14 the car with me and we drove up, and magically the door
15 opened and here's **Minor** putting on his shoes.

16 Q But when you say magically the door opens, does that
17 mean **Minor** opened it or that --

18 A No. Richard opened it, I believe, because **Minor** was
19 sat down putting on his shoes ready to go.

20 Q So when you say magically, you're just kind of saying
21 right when I approached the door --

22 A Yeah.

23 Q -- it kind of automatically opened as if somebody was
24 watching for me.

25 A He saw me coming up the driveway probably. And so,

1 immediately I was -- I was like let's just get the carseat
2 and go. And she said he won't give me the keys. He said I
3 don't have the keys. And I said, look, we need the carseat.
4 I had bought a carseat - as a matter of fact, I bought three
5 carseats, but this one was really nice.

6 Q The carseat in the purple car?

7 A The carseat in the purple car. And he would not give
8 us the keys. He said he didn't have them. But he had
9 disabled the car. He had pulled spark plugs, and I don't
10 know if it was something with the distributor or the
11 alternator, something. She's like he's a mechanic. He
12 knows how to disable and he knows how to repair, and I can't
13 make the car run. So -- and all I knew was I'm getting my
14 daughter and my grandson out of here, because I've never
15 liked this guy to begin with. But especially after he had
16 beaten Theia, and especially this time when he was alone
17 with my grandson in her trailer, disabling her car that she
18 had paid for with money that she had saved up in Asheville.
19 I went with her in Asheville. Actually it was out --

20 Q We're talking about the purple car?

21 A Yeah, the purple car she got from Fletcher, which is an
22 outskirts of Asheville.

23 Q To your knowledge, did Richard bring in any kind of
24 possessions into the relationship?

25 A No. And she got disability each month of like over

1 \$700. That has never been mentioned. I mean, she had -- she
2 had money coming in, and she had support from her mom. I
3 mean, I didn't just buy her anything she wanted. But she
4 knew that she could call upon me for anything, and she did.
5 And that's fine because I'm **Minor's** grandmother. I'm her
6 mother. That's what I do.

7 Q So she had a relatively small but steady check coming
8 in?

9 A She sure did, absolutely. For years.

10 Q Since you knew them Richard was basically living --

11 A Yes.

12 Q -- off of her?

13 A Yes.

14 Q Would you kind of call that leaching off of her?

15 A I'd call it -- she was his cash cow, yeah. And
16 leaching. He's a parasite. He's a disgusting individual.

17 Q What happened after you -- you said that you -- the
18 door opened. **Minor** was --

19 A Putting his shoes on, yeah.

20 Q -- came out, and what happened next?

21 A And so --

22 Q You asked Richard for --

23 A I asked Richard for it, and Theia went to try and talk
24 with him, and I was just like come on out. You know, if
25 he's not going to get it, that's fine. We'll put him in the

1 backseat. And Theia was really, really paranoid about that.
2 And I said, look, you know, if they pull me over I'll
3 explain it and they can come ask him for the carseat, you
4 know.

5 Q Theia's concern at that time is if you get caught
6 driving without a seat you're in trouble?

7 A Right. And I said, you know, that's on me. That's
8 okay. We did this in the '70s. We all survived it, before
9 carseats were even invented.

10 Q So where did you all go?

11 A So we went to the nearest Walmart and we get a carseat
12 and some Pull-Ups and some clothes for him, a few clothes
13 for her, some wipes. You know, just basic toiletries. And
14 I was trying to convince her the whole time, you know, you
15 need to just come back with me to Asheville. Just get away
16 from this guy. If he really did disable the car I don't
17 know how you're going to get back up to Asheville. But at
18 that point in time he didn't know where I lived. So I was
19 like he's going to have a hard time finding you. You need
20 to be safe. And I lived in a little cottage in Black
21 Mountain. It was a one bedroom but they could have stayed
22 with me. It was a safe place to be. But she decided that
23 she wanted to stay. And so, after having dinner at Ryan's we
24 got her -- she said I've stayed at the Roadway before and
25 stayed at my friend's house. And we actually went and

1 picked up one of her friends. I don't remember his name,
2 but he was very nice. And she was like he'll protect me,
3 you know, should Richard show up. Meanwhile, someone's
4 blowing up her phone, texting --

5 Q What do you mean by blowing up her phone?

6 A Texting, trying to call her. She's like, well, this is
7 my other friend. She didn't want me to know who it was, but
8 I kind of figured it was Richard, and it was, because that's
9 what he did. Anytime that she went to meet with me for
10 dinner, you know, shopping, whatever, she couldn't get a
11 moment's peace. He would be just constantly messaging her,
12 calling her, you know. And we're talking about maybe an
13 hour or an hour and a half of time, you know, just mother
14 and daughter. Or, you know, mother, daughter and grandson.
15 And then finally it got to the point where he just came
16 along with her. He was just that controlling. So anyway,
17 she -- I paid for her -- I think it was -- that was Friday.
18 I paid through the following Thursday at the Roadway off of
19 exit 17, I think, Spartanburg.

20 Q In South Carolina or in North Carolina?

21 A In South Carolina. She said she had friends here that
22 she -- you know, that she could maybe get an apartment with.
23 Maybe a roommate that she would need to call around, et
24 cetera -- and so, I was like, okay. But call me anytime. I
25 will come and get you both. I mean, I'm short of hog tying

1 her, there wasn't anything that I could do.

2 Q And that was on December 12th?

3 A That was on December 12th, a Friday.

4 Q After that time did you all ever talk about a fellow
5 named Poppy?

6 A We did, yes.

7 Q Who was Papi?

8 A Papi was a Mexican guy that she met. And the way that
9 I remember it, her describing him, is he was a contract
10 laborer. He was Hispanic. He was originally from Alabama.
11 And so, my question, of course, was, well, is he illegal or
12 is he legal? We don't need more, you know, going out of the
13 frying pan into the fire kind of thing. You know, is he
14 good to you. Is he a legal worker. What do you think.
15 Does he have any family of his own. Because I'm just like,
16 could you, please, for the life of you, just get away from
17 bad men.

18 Q You were looking for a more steady person?

19 A Yes. Yes. And she wanted me to meet him. She's like
20 he speaks Spanish. And, of course, I speak Spanish and a
21 little bit of German, so she thought that that was rather
22 quaint. And, you know, it's pretty -- it's pretty scary to
23 even contemplate, you know, yet another guy in her life
24 after what she went through with Richard, you know.

25 Q Did she indicate that she was making plans to move in

1 with Papi?

2 A She absolutely was. She was ready to move. And she
3 was like, I may need to call you like even in the middle of
4 the night because Richard has just become so controlling and
5 so violent. And I was like, Theia, I'm really scared that
6 someone's going to get killed. I'm really scared. Please
7 just come with me.

8 Q Have you seen Theia on other occasions where she's had
9 indications of being beaten?

10 A Yes.

11 Q While she was with Richard?

12 A Yes. In Asheville --

13 Q What were some other occasions? When you actually seen
14 what appeared to be beaten marks?

15 A That was -- I don't remember which night it was, and
16 you may have it in your notes. But it was -- she called me
17 at work and she said I'm up here at Michelle's house in 29A
18 and her voice was shaking and she was just almost screaming.
19 And so finally Michelle got on the phone. And where Theia
20 lived was here and Michelle lived up here at Erskine. So
21 she had run in her underwear and her shirt, bleeding from
22 her face, bleeding from her leg, where he had attacked her.

23 Q Erskine was public housing?

24 A Yes. Yes. Through HUD. And so, I came out to
25 Michelle's and so did the cops. They arrived right after

PATRICE MCARDLE: CROSS-EXAMINATION

731

1 me. And so, we took Theia's statement, and I was like --
2 you know, her door was wide open to her apartment. So I was
3 like, I'm afraid to even go back down here. But we did with
4 police escorting us. And the whole place was just
5 completely trashed. She said that he was taking a bath and
6 that he just --

7 Q Richard was taking a bath?

8 A Uh-huh. And she came in. I don't think he was
9 supposed to be there. But somebody had shattered -- there's
10 a window -- like here's the front door. Here's a window to
11 where the dryer and washer were. And somebody had shattered
12 a storm window. I'm not talking about like thin glass. I
13 mean, it's a very strong window. And that's what he would
14 crawl through to get in, and that's what he did. And she
15 was like you're not supposed to be here, you know. And he
16 went off on her is what she told me.

17 Q Did you participate in her filing charges against him
18 with the police?

19 A I don't know if she followed up with that or not. I
20 know that they came back down to the apartment with us. And
21 I don't know if they --

22 Q And they, you're talking about the police did?

23 A Yeah. I don't know if they filed the report or if she
24 did the following day. She did not ask me to take her to
25 the magistrate's. He had her keys to her car, keys to her

1 house, keys to her mailbox. He would not give them back.

2 Q And the incident that you're talking about on Erskine?

3 A Yes.

4 Q Do you remember the date?

5 A I do not unfortunately. I really don't know.

6 MR. VERNON: Beg the Court's permission, Your Honor.

7 A I know it was warm enough for her to be so clad without
8 freezing. So I want to say that it was maybe sometime in
9 late summer. Perhaps in September.

10 Q Late summer of what year?

11 A This was --

12 Q Could it have been in September of 2013?

13 A Yes. Because it definitely was in September of 2014
14 she was already gone from Erskine.

15 Q Did the -- what did the housing authority do? What
16 actions did they take?

17 A They had -- I thought that they had already told him he
18 couldn't be there for trespassing reasons.

19 Q Did they do anything physical to the apartment?

20 A I think that they came and fixed the locks definitely.
21 I'm not sure if they repaired the window. I would hope that
22 they would have. But that was something that Theia followed
23 up on. I don't really know. See, the housing authority
24 couldn't speak with me without Theia's permission.

25 Q Have you seen Theia other times where she's been

1 physically roughed up or are those the --

2 A She would call me on occasions. And my mother has
3 concurred with this, but she's not here, of course. My
4 mother is 80.

5 Q Well then, don't -- don't -- is it your opinion that
6 this has just been a recurring physical --

7 A It has been ongoing.

8 Q Almost from the beginning?

9 A Yes.

10 Q And yet Theia just keeps going back to him?

11 A And it's just -- he's contributed nothing. Nothing
12 positive.

13 Q Did Richard know you didn't like him?

14 A I'm sure he's very well aware of it.

15 Q What about when you said he kissed the hand of **Minor**
16 When you're talking to Theia and everybody does Richard like
17 come and sit in the crowd and joke with everybody and --

18 A He nearby for me -- Theia and me. Like when we met at
19 Arby's. And he just was constantly nearby to just monitor
20 the conversation. He wasn't part of the conversation
21 necessarily. He may make a comment here and there, but it
22 was never like loquacious or talkative.

23 Q And I apologize. I'm going to go back. On the 27th,
24 which was the birthday/Christmas --

25 A Yes.

1 Q -- exchange.

2 A Yes.

3 Q What time did Theia and Minor and Richard arrive in
4 Asheville?

5 A It was a little bit after 12:00.

6 Q So they would have had to leave -- if they came
7 straight away they would have had to leave about 7:30 in the
8 morning to -- well, I'm sorry. About 9:30 in the morning, I
9 guess?

10 A I think they got a late start that morning, because we
11 were supposed to meet at 12:00 and she said we're going to
12 be a little bit late. We're a little delayed. And I was
13 like it's okay. It's no big deal. I didn't care.

14 Q But roughly when do you think that they did arrive?

15 A They did arrive a little bit after 12:00. It wasn't
16 quite 12:30, so it wasn't that late.

17 Q And so, it would have been about a two and a half hour
18 ride?

19 A Probably so, yes.

20 Q So if they arrived at 12:30 they would have had to
21 leave about 10:00?

22 A At least, yes.

23 Q And if they left around 2:30 they wouldn't have gotten
24 home until after 5:00?

25 A Uh-huh, probably, or maybe later because of whatever

1 traffic.

2 Q And then if they had stopped along the way, too?

3 A Yes.

4 Q So for the better part of the day of the 27th you were
5 with them, that they were either on the road or with you or
6 back on the road going home?

7 A That's exactly right, yes.

8 Q So the daylight hours of the 27th, they would not have
9 even been at home?

10 A Not only that. But I believe that Theia told me they
11 went out to Fletcher to see either Junior or some other
12 friends -- not Fletcher, Fairview. Fletcher and Fairview
13 are connected like this.

14 Q They were from -- they lived in Asheville for a while.
15 So not only you in that area --

16 A Yeah.

17 Q -- they had other friends?

18 A So they went to see, I want to say, at least Junior.
19 If not Junior, as well as James, out in Fairview.

20 Q And do you remember them coming from court or going to
21 court?

22 A No.

23 Q The 27th was a Saturday, wasn't it?

24 A It was a Saturday. Yes, absolutely.

25 Q Asheville's in a different state. They do things a

1 little different. But do they run criminal courts on the
2 weekends?

3 A They do not.

4 Q So that will be an unlikely --

5 A That's exactly right. Yes, sir.

6 Q And then I think you had indicated that Theia had
7 called you on December 28th from Walmart?

8 A She did. It was about 8:00 p.m.

9 Q And that was a call about Papi?

10 A Yeah, mainly about Papi, and like -- she was like, I'm
11 just suffocating. He just won't let me be. You know, I've
12 got to get away. And I was like, well, do you want me to
13 come down now? Do you want me to come get you both and move
14 you to Papi's now? I was like, I am ready. So ready for
15 you to be away from him.

16 Q And you heard Minor chattering in the background?

17 A Yeah. She wanted him to talk with me on the phone.
18 And that was normal, of course, because I'm his grandmother.
19 But he -- and he did for a little bit. But then he was busy
20 trying to sing. He just wanted to sing. He's a lot like
21 his mom. She sings.

22 Q Now, Minor was a small -- he was about three feet
23 tall, I guess?

24 A Yeah.

25 Q And he was fairly small framed?

PATRICE MCARDLE: CROSS-EXAMINATION

737

1 A He was. But he was -- for a kid he was solidly built
2 because he was just so active and strong. You know, really
3 strong.

4 Q Now, when you said that he was good with words, what
5 would be a kind of sentence that Minor could say?

6 A Well, he was very conversational. For example, during
7 that last meal that we had together he'd take a bite of his
8 pizza and he'd say, "Hmm, this is good." And he would say
9 -- you know, like if I dropped something he would say, "Oh,
10 my goodness," or, you know, if I sneezed he would say,
11 "Bless you, Mammaw." And he was just really a polite kid
12 and he would say please and thank you and excuse me. I
13 mean, some kids do and some kids don't. But my daughter
14 definitely worked with him to make sure that, you know, he
15 was on it. That's why she wanted me to get the VTech for
16 him. It was one of the more advanced models that she had
17 not been able to afford, although she bought him toys for
18 Christmas, and I said sure. Because she wanted him to learn
19 more and more.

20 Q Let me turn to the day of December 30th. You're saying
21 that Theia called you from the hospital?

22 A Yes.

23 Q Is it possible she was giving you what she knew from
24 Richard about what had happened?

25 A It is possible.

1 Q That she was relaying what she thought was going on?

2 A It was almost like she was programmed to say this
3 explanation that to me didn't fly at all. But she -- it is
4 imperative that she make me understand it. And apparently
5 it was imperative that they make the ER doctor understand it
6 because he said the same thing.

7 Q And she didn't talk about beating or bruising? Her
8 concern at that time was the vomit and the choking?

9 A That's exactly right. That he stop breathing.

10 Q Do you think if she had indicated that he had been beat
11 or stuff like that, that you would remember that today?

12 A I absolutely would, yes.

13 Q So Theia's concern when she first called you is my
14 child's choking, he's vomiting in his mouth --

15 A Right.

16 Q -- and he's -- we're taking him to the emergency room?

17 A Right.

18 Q And we're taking hm to the emergency room?

19 A Right.

20 Q And then she gave you kind of a summary of what
21 happened?

22 A Yes.

23 Q But just because you had seen Minor two days before
24 and, in fact, talked to him briefly the day before,
25 something just didn't sound right to you?

1 A It was not anywhere near right, no.

2 Q And you're well aware of the tumultuous relationship?

3 A Yes.

4 Q And, in fact, you're the one who asked Dr. Holaday to
5 look into the case more thoroughly?

6 A Yes, I am.

7 Q And then you said Theia later on called you that same
8 morning, early in the morning --

9 A Yes.

10 Q -- while this was all going on?

11 A Yes.

12 Q And she made the statement, "This happens all the
13 time"?

14 A Yes.

15 Q Did she specifically say what she was talking about, or
16 you were just kind of testifying how you took --

17 A No, she really told me. She said, "You need to accept
18 this. It has happened. It happens all the time." She was
19 explaining it to me --

20 Q Was she talking about children choking or just that --

21 A That certain condition of child choking on their vomit
22 and there you go. Like it was something like SIDS that was
23 just happening all over the place all the time. And I
24 thought, no, I do not have to accept it and I'm not going
25 to.

1 Q And she was still at that time just talking about that
2 the child had vomited in his mouth and --

3 A And breathed it in, yeah.

4 Q -- and had died?

5 A Yes. And also, by that time I had heard the doctor's
6 version. And I think I also told her, you know, I've heard
7 a different version completely from the doctor. Which one
8 is it? You know, were you traveling in the night, or did
9 Richard come in? And that's when she had just got pretty
10 flustered and I said, you know what, I got to go. I got to
11 go.

12 Q And you could hear Richard in the background talking to
13 some police officer --

14 A Somebody, trying to explain --

15 Q -- or somebody explaining the same?

16 A -- the first story that I heard.

17 Q And you sat through this trial today? All week?

18 A Yes.

19 Q And that was what your understanding of what Richard
20 had told her was that the child was choking?

21 A Yes.

22 Q So that's consistent with what you heard him saying
23 then?

24 A That is consistent, yes. He was saying that he'd come
25 into his room and found him that way. And again, this time

PATRICE MCARDLE: CROSS-EXAMINATION

741

- 1 -- until this week I didn't know that they had moved rooms.
2 I thought here were the two bedrooms, like totally opposite.
- 3 Q And Theia's been in custody since December 30th of
4 2014?
- 5 A Yes.
- 6 Q And during that time you've only accepted one collect
7 call from her?
- 8 A That's exactly right.
- 9 Q Which we know because the jail recorded it?
- 10 A Yes.
- 11 Q And you explain to her that you just wanted to know
12 what -- you weren't overly sympathetic --
- 13 A No.
- 14 Q -- and indicated you wanted to help her, did you?
- 15 A No, I was not.
- 16 Q In fact, you said something like "If I think you are
17 guilty, you know, you will pay for it."
- 18 A Absolutely. I probably did. I don't remember it
19 verbatim what I said. But yeah, I was not polite.
- 20 Q And you said words to the effect this might even be a
21 death penalty case?
- 22 A I'm sorry, what?
- 23 Q You indicated to the prosecutor you said that they
24 might even put you to death for this?
- 25 A They might. And I don't know. I don't know what the

1 laws dictate in South Carolina, or really even in North
2 Carolina for that sort of thing. To me --

3 Q But that was just you acting out of emotion?

4 A Oh, yeah.

5 Q Speaking out of emotion?

6 A Just furious.

7 Q Do you believe that your daughter beat Minor to
8 death?

9 A I don't think that she did based on what I've heard
10 this week. I wasn't sure before.

11 MR. DANIEL: Objection, Your Honor. I mean, this
12 matter is the fact of the jury.

13 MR. VERNER: That is -- I agree with the Solicitor,
14 Your Honor.

15 THE COURT: Sustained.

16 MR. VERNER: Just beg the Court's indulgence one
17 second, Your Honor.

18 Q And you met with Investigator Moore, the officer in the
19 middle --

20 A Yes.

21 Q -- on December 31st of --

22 A Yes, I did.

23 Q -- 2014?

24 A Yes.

25 Q And you voluntarily came to Newberry to speak to her?

1 A I did.

2 Q And, in fact, you were in favor of a full investigation
3 at that time?

4 A Absolutely.

5 Q Whether it implicated Theia or whether it implicated
6 Richard or whether it implicated both of them?

7 A Exactly right, yes.

8 Q But you were suspicious something wrong had happened?

9 A I sure was.

10 Q On the issue of the -- what we heard the skating
11 incident. But that is true that the child had fallen during
12 the skating incident?

13 A Yeah, he fell. And I didn't even see the mark on his
14 hand. I saw red clay mud and I saw Richard make a big show
15 of kissing his booboo. And I thought, I don't even know
16 what kind of germs are on that. There was no way I would do
17 that. I mean, it wasn't enough of an injury for me to even
18 reach into my purse, that probably weighs 50 pounds, and has
19 antibacterial and band-aids, you know. I mean, it really --
20 it was not that big of a deal. And he wasn't crying. He
21 just said owe, of course.

22 Q And as of the 27th that was the only injury that you
23 were aware of --

24 A Exactly right.

25 Q -- that Minor would have had?

1 A He also -- he also went to the bathroom when we were at
2 the McDonald's. And it was -- I don't know how the
3 McDonald's are here, but their bathrooms are about this
4 wide, unless you go into the handicapped. And he was in
5 that one. Theia was standing at the door to give him some
6 privacy. I was on my cell phone talking about a dog that I
7 was, you know, dealing with. But he went to the bathroom
8 easily. And, I mean, I could -- I just glanced, but I
9 didn't see anything out of the ordinary when he was pulling
10 up his Pull-Ups and pants.

11 Q And he was fairly potty trained at that point?

12 A Pretty much. He was doing a good job. Which I think
13 is normal for a little boy that's about to turn three. I
14 don't know. I've never raised a little boy before. I was
15 the baby of my family.

16 Q And I believe you also, in addition to -- or maybe at
17 the same time that you met with Investigator Moore, you also
18 met with the SLED Agent to her left?

19 A I did.

20 Q The photograph -- did you see the Facebook photograph
21 of you holding --

22 A Minor

23 Q -- Minor

24 A Which one? There are more than one.

25 Q The one I put into evidence in this case?

PATRICE MCARDLE: REDIRECT EXAMINATION

745

1 A Okay. The one of me holding him when we were at

2 Arby's. Yes. Yes.

3 Q And that was taken in November of -- at Biltmore in

4 November 2014?

5 A Yes. Biltmore Arby's. And I don't know the exact day.

6 I want to say November -- it was later than November 14th, I

7 think. It wasn't quite Thanksgiving, but I don't remember

8 the exact day. And it was taken on Theia's phone.

9 Otherwise I would have it in my phone and then I would know
10 exactly.

11 MR. VERNER: I'm sorry you had to be here, but I thank
12 you, Ms. McArdle. The Prosecutor may have some more.

13 MR. DANIEL: Very briefly, Your Honor. We have Dr.
14 Ross up there.

15 THE COURT: I don't know that we're going to get to her
16 before lunch. I'll tell you that right now.

17 REDIRECT EXAMINATION

18 BY MR. DANIEL:

19 Q Ms. McArdle, would you agree that no parent wants to
20 think the worst of their child, correct?

21 A That is correct.

22 Q And we talked about Theia's past in North Carolina with
23 DSS taking Minor away for about a year, correct?

24 A That's correct.

25 Q And it's because of the incident involving Theia

1 slapping him in the face for breaking cigarettes, correct?

2 A That's what I'm told, yes.

3 Q And do you accept the fact that she did that?

4 A I'm not happy with it, no.

5 Q But do you accept it?

6 A Do you mean I accept it as a fact?

7 Q Yes. Do you --

8 A Yes, it is a fact, absolutely. Undisputable.

9 Q And she was convicted?

10 A She was. And she went through the treatments that they
11 said she had to go through, the classes, et cetera, to make
12 her a better parent. More responsible.

13 Q But wouldn't it be nice if you didn't have to accept
14 something like that, correct?

15 A Oh, yeah. Very much so.

16 Q And is it fair to say you're holding out hope that
17 Richard Bowman was the one who did this to Minor

18 A I --

19 Q That you'd like to think that in your head?

20 A I would actually like to think that nobody could do
21 that to my grandson, to be completely honest. But if you're
22 asking me if I want him to be guilty instead of her then my
23 answer remains the same as it was the day that my grandson
24 died. I want whoever did this to my grandson to be punished
25 to the fullest extent of the law. I don't care who it is.

1 I mean that. I am still -- I have a fury in me that has not
2 died. It is still there. I am so angry.

3 Q And I understand. And it's difficult to see your
4 daughter on trial for this crime?

5 A Well, the most difficult thing of all is imaging. I
6 can't even imagine how somebody could do that to my
7 grandson. And I want -- to be completely honest, I'm not a
8 physically violent person. But I want them to suffer.

9 Q Well, it's inconceivable that something like this could
10 happen, correct?

11 A Yes.

12 Q Especially your own child could commit such a heinous
13 act?

14 A Exactly right. And to me it's like I did everything
15 that I could within my means to support them. And short of
16 hog tying them and bringing them back to North Carolina,
17 which is totally against the law, I couldn't do anything
18 else. I felt very helpless.

19 Q But sometimes children go astray, correct?

20 A Yes, they do.

21 MR. DANIEL: I don't have any further questions, Your
22 Honor.

23 THE COURT: Any recross?

24 MR. VERNER: No, Your Honor.

25 THE COURT: Very good. Ma'am, you may step down.

1 (Whereupon, the witness stepped down from the witness
2 stand.)

3 THE COURT: Solicitor, do we have -- I believe we
4 cannot get to Dr. Ross at this point in time. I don't want
5 to break her testimony up. So we'll have her after lunch.
6 I know she's still out there. So if you want to come back
7 around 2:00 or so, that's fine. I apologize for the
8 inconvenience to you.

9 MR. STUMBO: Judge, if we could, maybe take an earlier
10 lunch today, now. And I wouldn't mind her being the next
11 witness right after we eat lunch.

12 THE COURT: My impression was that the gentleman back
13 there was from SLED and I thought that we could do him. And
14 that should not be too long.

15 MR. STUMBO: He is.

16 THE COURT: I'm assuming he's the telecommunications
17 guy.

18 MR. STUMBO: He is. That's Chris Johnson, correct. We
19 can put him on. I mean, assuming -- it shouldn't take long.

20 THE COURT: That has been an assumption throughout that
21 this trial.

22 MR. STUMBO: Yes.

23 THE COURT: Let's go ahead and call him and maybe --

24 MR. STUMBO: Well, fortunately, Mr. Johnson lives in
25 Newberry, Judge. He is a resident here.

CHRIS JOHNSON: DIRECT EXAMINATION

749

1 THE COURT: Let's call him.

2 MR. STUMBO: All right. The State calls Chris Johnson.

3 CHRIS JOHNSON, having been first duly
4 sworn, testified as follows:

5 DIRECT EXAMINATION

6 BY MR. STUMBO:

7 Q Good afternoon, Detective Johnson. You're a SLED
8 Agent?

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q You from Newberry; is that correct?

11 A Yes, sir.

12 Q Born and raised?

13 A Yes, sir.

14 Q Before you went to SLED you worked for the Sheriff's
15 Department in Newberry?

16 A I've worked dispatch as a reserve officer while I was
17 going to college. Yes, sir.

18 Q And how long have you been with SLED?

19 A Twelve and a half years as a sworn agent.

20 Q You being a sworn agent, that means after you go to the
21 Academy and --

22 A Yes, sir. I worked --

23 Q -- have arrest powers and that kind of thing.

24 A Yes, sir. I worked non-sworn for about six years prior
25 to.

1 Q And you worked with their computer crime at SLED?

2 A Yes, sir. My first four years was in computer crimes.

3 Q And what kind of training did you get to be a SLED
4 agent working computer crimes?

5 A Anything from basic detective to a lot of the intrusion
6 training as far as computer networks were concerned.

7 Computer exams. Phone technology as far as examinations of
8 phones. Doing analysis on call records. That type thing.

9 Q And as part of that training did you learn how to take
10 a computer or a phone, some kind of device, that has data on
11 it and extract that data for the purposes of analysis?

12 A Yes, sir.

13 Q And that's been your job for the last how many years at
14 SLED?

15 A I've been doing exclusively the phone side for the last
16 eight to nine years.

17 Q So your job -- what's your job title there at SLED?

18 A I'm currently a Lieutenant supervisor Special Agent
19 over one of our fugitive teams.

20 Q But you've been working cell phone investigation --

21 A Yes, sir.

22 Q -- basically the last eight?

23 A We specialize in that side of it as far as the fugitive
24 operations or intelligence based policing.

25 Q You have specialized training classes to learn how to

1 do this stuff? How many hours of training have you had?

2 A Probably in the hundreds. I've got a notebook full of
3 certificates at this point in my career.

4 Q And just give me a really rough estimate. How many
5 computers or phones have you analyzed over the last eight
6 years?

7 A Probably two, 300 easily. Maybe more than that.

8 Q As part of that you also -- you extract data. And can
9 you compare those with call records from cell phone
10 companies?

11 A It's a little bit different. What we do as far as the
12 extractions from the phone provides you with a different set
13 of data than what we actually get from the phone companies.
14 Some of it is a little bit the same as far as the call.
15 Incoming, outgoing calls. That type of thing. But what we
16 can do with the legal process to the phone companies, it
17 allows us to get location information as far as cell tower
18 usage, that type of thing, sectors.

19 Q So basically you can extract the information off the
20 phone, law enforcement can subpoena records from the cell
21 phone companies --

22 A Yes, sir.

23 Q -- and you can kind of interface those records and look
24 at them?

25 A Yes, sir. Yes, sir.

1 Q In comparing those are you able to ascertain where a
2 person might have been using a cell phone at any given time?

3 A Generalized. Yes, sir. We can do -- it doesn't give
4 an actual thumb print as far as where the phone is exactly
5 at in most cases. But what it will do is give you the
6 sector or the tower. Each tower is made up out of normally
7 three sectors. Sometimes there's only what they call an
8 omni-directional tower which is just one. One entire
9 circle. But you can break it down based off the -- and it
10 gets -- it kind of kind of gets a little technical. But
11 basically you can tell the footprint of the tower and that
12 particular geographic sector is about as close as we
13 normally get.

14 Q Is that -- you said you can hit off of three
15 coordinates or sectors basically?

16 A Yes, sir. Each tower is normally made up -- each
17 antenna on the tower is normally made up into three sectors.

18 Q And is that what is known as triangulation?

19 A No -- well, triangulation gets into when you start
20 looking at measurements off of three different towers. This
21 is just, you know -- you'll see on the call records that it
22 hit this tower, and then it'll tell you that it was on, you
23 know, either sector one or sector two. And that's telling
24 you what face of the tower, as far as the compensating goes,
25 is how we map them out.

CHRIS JOHNSON: DIRECT EXAMINATION

753

1 Q And those records come from the cell phone companies?

2 A Yes, sir. Yes, sir.

3 Q They provide you --

4 A They maintain that.

5 Q -- what towers they own --

6 A Yes, sir.

7 Q -- that that phone hit off at any given time?

8 A Right. Yes, sir.

9 Q It gives you times that those calls were made?

10 A Yes, sir.

11 Q Are you able to -- as part of your job there at SLED
12 were you able to analyze a cell phone in relation to this
13 case?

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q And that was a phone that was identified as one
16 belonging to the Defendant McArdle?

17 A Yes, sir. I believe it was -- the model of it -- or
18 the make of it was a Blu phone. A B-l-u.

19 Q A B-l --

20 A B-l-u. It's called Blu. It's a manufacturer of cell
21 phones.

22 Q Is that one of the ones you kind of get at Walmart?
23 Kind of pay by the month --

24 A I believe so. It's not a very common phone. I think
25 that was probably only the second or third one that I had

1 seen. Not as popular as, you know, your Apple, your
2 Samsung, Galaxies, that type of thing.

3 Q Now, when you get a device, a type of cell phone, what
4 generally at SLED -- you take that back to the computer
5 crime center which is on Bush River Road in Columbia,
6 correct?

7 A Sometimes. Sometimes we can do it in the field. It
8 just depends on the phone itself. This particular phone --
9 a lot of times -- we've got basically a suitcase that we
10 carry that's called a Cellebrite system. This particular
11 phone was not compatible with Cellebrite, so we did take it
12 back to computer crime and used a program called XRY. A new
13 program that they had that we were able to extract the data
14 from this phone with.

15 Q So XRY was compatible with this phone?

16 A Yes, sir.

17 Q Cellebrite was not?

18 A That's right.

19 Q And you had to take it to the computer crime center to
20 use the --

21 A Yes, sir.

22 Q -- XRY system?

23 A Yes, sir. It's not quite as portable.

24 Q Did you do an extraction of Theia McArdle's phone?

25 A Yes, sir. I was present during the extraction. It was

1 myself and the computer crimes agent. But I was present
2 during the entire time.

3 Q And were those extractions, that data, was it
4 transferred to a digital format to give to --

5 A It was.

6 Q -- law enforcement?

7 A It was. We -- basically it works the same way as the
8 Cellebrite system. You basically identify the make and
9 model of the phone. You tell the computer software what it
10 is. And then it will tell you which wire connection, which
11 plug to pull out of your box and use. And then from that
12 you just basically hit start and it dumps it into a folder.
13 You tell it what you want. You know, my search warrant says
14 I can get call records, emails, that type thing, but it says
15 I can't get, you know, app data or something, then you don't
16 select that box. And you go through and select, you know,
17 what you're allowed to get based on the search warrant that
18 was signed, and then it extracts it and puts it into a
19 folder that we can burn to a disk or a thumb drive or --

20 Q Okay. Now, why do you extract the information and then
21 analyze that instead of just flipping through the phone?

22 A Just like with computers. Once you start accessing
23 anything on the phone then you've got the capability of
24 changing date and times as to when a file was created, when
25 it was last accessed. You have -- and then at that point

1 you start altering evidence, which is obviously something
2 you never want to do. You want to always -- even when we're
3 doing computer crimes, you would image the actual hard drive
4 and then work off of the image so that you maintain the
5 security of the actual evidence without making any
6 alterations to the files.

7 Q So once you image it you put the phone to the side and
8 --

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q -- maintain the -- preserve the evidence?

11 A Yes, sir. You always work off of that working copy or
12 that evidence file.

13 Q So it's an exact -- when you say image --

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q -- there's not one bit change --

16 A Yes, sir. In some of the phones, the Smart Phones, you
17 can do that with, like with the computers. It's what they
18 call a hashtag. And it was -- basically it's a 10 to 12
19 digit number, letter number, that you can go back and look
20 and it is able to show that it is a mirror copy. I looked
21 at that hashtag on it.

22 Q Right. So it's better than DNA?

23 A Yes.

24 Q It's basically the exact --

25 A Yes, sir. That same thing. It's just a computerized

1 version.

2 Q And after you used the software to extract the data and
3 put it into a report, I'm assuming XRY has the ability to --

4 A Yes, sir. It just --

5 Q -- get you a report?

6 A Right. Just like with computers. Everything coming
7 off that phone is basically zeros and ones. It's all
8 written in computer language. But it's taken it and put it
9 -- in the same way that you see it on the phone it's putting
10 it into that report so that, you know, it makes sense. It
11 looks like what you would see on the phone. It's not just
12 computer language.

13 Q I'm going to hand you --

14 MR. STUMBO: If I may approach, Your Honor.

15 Q State's 142.

16 A Yes, sir.

17 Q And you were able to review this particular disk in
18 preparation for court today?

19 A Yes, sir.

20 Q And you initialed the --

21 A I did.

22 Q Is it fair and accurate copy of your report of the cell
23 phone?

24 A Yes, sir. The actual folder name is the same, CJ, my
25 initials, that we created. It's the exact same.

1 MR. STUMBO: Judge, we'd move the cell phone data,
2 State's 142 into evidence.

3 THE COURT: Any objection?

4 MR. VERNER: Your Honor, do they have specific things
5 they want to bring in? Not --

6 MR. STUMBO: We do, Judge. We have a exhibit that's --

7 MR. VERNER: That seems more appropriate than -- I
8 don't even know if that's like a disk you can put in and you
9 know how to run automatically.

10 THE COURT: Do you have the data broken down?

11 MR. STUMBO: We plan to publish, Judge, the printed out
12 version, which I've got right here. And I think Mr. Verner
13 has already cross-examined one of the witnesses on it.

14 MR. VERNER: This is the information on it?

15 THE COURT: That's the printout of what's on the disk?

16 MR. STUMBO: This is phone records, Judge. It's a
17 little bit different from the cell phone companies. But, of
18 course, data from the disk itself -- or from the cell phone
19 itself, as we talked about before, we have to
20 cross-reference times and that sort of thing between the
21 phone records and the phone itself.

22 MR. VERNER: I don't have a problem -- the disk is
23 what's in the Solicitor's written package in his hand?

24 MR. STUMBO: Correct.

25 MR. VERNER: Okay. Just -- I don't have any problem

CHRIS JOHNSON: DIRECT EXAMINATION

759

1 with both or --

2 THE COURT: What's the exhibit number again?

3 MR. STUMBO: 142, Judge.

4 THE COURT: State's 142 is in evidence.

5 MR. STUMBO: And, Judge, I believe 136 is in. But if
6 could check with --

7 MR. VERNER: Well, Your Honor, actually the Assistant
8 Solicitor is telling me it's somewhat different from the --

9 MR. STUMBO: Right. The phone records need to be
10 compared with the actual phone data, which is the disk.
11 Does that make sense?

12 MR. VERNER: That's not the way I'm understanding it
13 fro the Assistant.

14 MR. DANIEL: That is --

15 MR. VERNER: Okay.

16 MR. STUMBO: And all this has obviously been given in
17 discovery, Judge.

18 MR. VERNER: I don't have a problem. Just before it
19 goes back to the jury, if I could access on the computer
20 just to make sure what it's -- we're talking about just the
21 phone calls and dates and stuff like that.

22 THE COURT: 136 is in evidence as well, and I'll allow
23 142 into evidence subject to Mr. Verner's opportunity to
24 review same.

25 (Whereupon, State's Exhibit No. 136 and 142 were

1 admitted into evidence.)

2 MR. STUMBO: Now, I'm going to -- I've I may approach,
3 Your Honor.

4 THE COURT: Please.

5 Q Agent Johnson, I'm going to hand you what's already
6 State's 136.

7 A Yes, sir.

8 Q This is -- what is this?

9 A This is T-Mobile's -- basically their version of the
10 call records, call location information.

11 MR. STUMBO: If we could pull that up, Mr. Bentley,
12 136.

13 Q And if you could, Agent Johnson -- can you see that?
14 Do you need to step down?

15 A I would prefer.

16 Q You can step down. Just keep your voice up for the
17 court reporter.

18 A Yes, sir.

19 (Whereupon, the witness stepped down from the witness
20 stand.)

21 Q If you could, just as an example on the top line there,
22 explain to me where it says first tower latitude and
23 longitude. What does that -- can you explain that to the
24 jury?

25 A Basically what it's giving you is the actual GPS

CHRIS JOHNSON: DIRECT EXAMINATION

761

1 coordinates of the tower where it sits. Most of them will
2 have an address, but the address is not always exact.
3 Whereas that coordinate, as you can see, is a lot longer
4 than most normal coordinates. It's an exact thumb print.
5 You can drive to those coordinates and you'll find that
6 tower.

7 Q And so, you can actually pull up a Google map and put a
8 pin right on where that tower --

9 A Yes, sir. You're going to see the tower on Google map.
10 (Whereupon, the witness returns to the witness stand.)

11 Q I'm going to hand you what's been marked as State's 144
12 for ID.

13 A Yes, sir.

14 Q You had an opportunity to look at this before today?

15 A Yes, sir.

16 Q And is this a fair and accurate representation of the
17 area around the Enoree location where the Defendant lived?

18 A Yes, sir. That tower is the one that most likely would
19 service her house.

20 Q And the little yellow pin on there was dropped at the
21 location. That's just the computer -- you can put a little
22 pin on the exact spot?

23 A Yes, sir. That would be the coordinates that would
24 correspond with that tower, or that particular call.

25 Q And the other pin there is in the exact location of the

1 address where --

2 A Yes, sir.

3 Q -- Theia McArdle and Richard Bowman lived?

4 A That was her address on [REDACTED], yes.

5 Q And both of those are reflected on State's 144.

6 MR. STUMBO: Judge we would just move State's 144 into
7 evidence to show location on the Google map.

8 MR. VERNER: 144?

9 MR. STUMBO: That's correct.

10 MR. VERNER: Without objection, Your Honor.

11 THE COURT: It is admitted without objection.

12 (Whereupon, State's Exhibit No. 144 was admitted into
13 evidence.)

14 (Whereupon, the witness stepped down from the witness
15 stand.)

16 Q Look at -- pull that up. 144. Agent Johnson, if you
17 could, just let the jury know what we're looking at here.
18 What area.

19 A Okay. Again, this is the coordinates for that tower,
20 where it's mapped out at. Again, if you zoom in you'd
21 probably be able to see the tower there on the map. These
22 are, I believe, the times that were associated with that
23 tower as calls were made. And then our pinpoint here is the
24 actual address where the McArdle home is located.

25 Q And this is right off I-26 exit 49, or the Highway 49

1 exit right here?

2 A Yes, sir.

3 Q That's the home right off the exit and this is the cell
4 phone tower.

5 A Yes, sir.

6 Q How many -- just an estimate. Is that a mile away, two
7 miles away?

8 A It's probably, without drawing it out -- the software
9 we use can actually draw the circle out to the exact mile.
10 I would say it's probably a mile and a half to that location
11 as far as the crow flies, as you would say.

12 Q So when calls are made from the phone, from Theia
13 McArdle's phone which you were able to ascertain using the
14 records that you have up on the bench there, which is
15 State's 136 --

16 A Yeah.

17 Q -- you could see the exact times from those records
18 that you -- we got from T-Mobile that it hit off of this
19 tower right by the home in Enoree, correct?

20 A Yes, sir.

21 Q And listed on 144 are these times. And I'm assuming
22 this is -- this one says p.m. on December 29th. Could you
23 just publish for the jury and read what times her phone hit
24 off of that tower?

25 MR. VERNER: Has the witness identified what those even

1 are yet, Your Honor? It's probably appropriate to let the
2 witness say what those stand for instead of the Solicitor
3 telling.

4 MR. STUMBO: That's fine.

5 Q On this creation here, what do those times stand for?

6 A Those were times that the calls were made on that date
7 associated with that tower.

8 Q And you were able to ascertain those using the records
9 and --

10 A Yes, sir. It's just a matter of looking at the call
11 records and matching that date and time up and you can go
12 over and find that tower number as well as those coordinates
13 were the same.

14 Q And then you could create the summary which is State's
15 144 that reflects what you're getting off of the records,
16 correct?

17 A Yes, sir.

18 Q What times of Theia McArdle's phone hit off of this
19 tower by the house in Enoree?

20 A Again, as far as the date of December 29th, 2014 in the
21 p.m., it was at 1:13 p.m., 3:53 p.m., 6:32 up through 7:39
22 p.m., 8:04 p.m., 8:15 p.m., 8:35 p.m., 11:19 p.m. 11:30
23 p.m., 11:34 p.m. and 11:41 p.m.

24 Q So up through 8:35 p.m. in the evening her phone is
25 hitting off this tower?

CHRIS JOHNSON: DIRECT EXAMINATION

765

1 A Yes, sir.

2 Q And then the next time 8:35 in the evening is 11:19
3 p.m. at night?

4 A Yes, sir.

5 Q So there's a little bit of a gap there.

6 MR. STUMBO: You can return to your seat.

7 (Whereupon, the witness returned to the witness stand.)

8 Q Based on the records -- and, of course, I just took
9 them from you. I need to give them back to you. What other
10 towers were you able to ascertain locations where Theia
11 McArdle's phone bounced off of that day? The day of
12 December 29th.

13 A Yes, sir. Can we pull it back up on there where we can
14 see the whole thing?

15 Q Sure.

16 MR. STUMBO: If we could pull up 136, Walter.

17 A These Excel spreadsheets aren't small enough to fit on
18 these pages. Do you mind if I step down?

19 (Whereupon, the witness stepped down from the witness
20 stand.)

21 A So we can scroll down -- again, for text messages which
22 is indicated by the SM message, a short message service,
23 those will not go to cell sites. Most companies don't show
24 that. Verizon and all of them don't report a cell site.

25 Q Let me stop you there. You say show SMS. Does that

1 mean a text message?

2 A Yes, sir. The text messages, or the MMS, which is the
3 multimedia service messages, they don't show cell site
4 information. Most all the phone companies report that same
5 way. They don't report the location.

6 Q So let me just ask this question. So it's showing you
7 the text messages. And that's when you see an SMS that's a
8 text?

9 A Yes, sir. That's a text message that was sent.

10 Q And this same column where it says voice -- and maybe
11 -- I don't want to ask you a dumb question. But that means
12 it's an audio voice connection?

13 A That's an actual -- it's a voice connection.

14 THE COURT: If you don't mind, please. She's having
15 trouble taking this down. Don't talk over each other.
16 Okay?

17 MR. STUMBO: Yes, sir.

18 THE COURT: So when he's talking I need you to be
19 quite, please, Solicitor. Go ahead.

20 MR. STUMBO: Yes, sir.

21 Q Can you explain to the jury what we're looking at here,
22 Mr. Johnson?

23 A Yes, sir. These are the call records for the phone.
24 Again, on voice call it would indicate not only the
25 telephone number but for DSM calls, which is T-Mobile, it

CHRIS JOHNSON: DIRECT EXAMINATION

767

1 indicates the IMSI number and the IMEI number. Those are
2 basically the serial numbers for the SIM card inside the
3 phone and the actual serial number for the device itself. A
4 lot of times in fugitive cases they will swap those numbers,
5 so it allows you to make sure that you're keeping everything
6 accurate as far as calls goes. And you've got the voice
7 again showing incoming or outgoing. And it will indicate
8 the party receiving or making the call, whichever way the
9 phone calls go. And it'll show you the caller ID. And then
10 again, as we indicated, T-Mobile will also give you the
11 actual make and model of the phone which is matched up to
12 the Blu phone that we downloaded. Here, this should be
13 probably the LAC, which is the local area code. Basically
14 what that is, is with cell phones, you know, you may have --
15 they may number a tower the same in Columbia and number a
16 tower the same in Greenville. If you don't know what that
17 LAC number is then that's the only way to separate the
18 towers to make sure that you're mapping the tower correctly,
19 that it's in the location it's in. You know, particularly
20 in Enoree versus being at Myrtle Beach. So those all go
21 into making sure that the call location matches. And then
22 again, T-Mobile goes one step further. It goes ahead and
23 puts the actual GPS coordinates into this spreadsheet. Your
24 other companies put it on a completely separate spreadsheet
25 where you have to kind of cross-reference. But T-Mobile

1 makes it a little bit easier for you to bring it together.

2 Q Was there another tower or series of towers that this
3 phone hit off of between 8:35 --

4 A There were.

5 Q -- and 11:19?

6 A Yes. If we can scroll down. So you asked if it
7 changes and it does. You see at 8:15 we're at the 41703
8 tower, which is the GPS coordinates for 34.60333492 and then
9 -81.8827899. We see that that tower stays the same. Again,
10 you can cross-reference it back to the LAC and the cell ID
11 number until we get down to, I believe it was, 8:52 and then
12 those coordinates change. At 8:52 p.m. and at 10:58 those
13 numbers have changed.

14 Q At 8:52 it's hitting off a different tower that's
15 reflected in the records, correct?

16 A Yes, sir.

17 Q And were you able to determine, or were you able to
18 determine through your investigation where that tower was
19 located?

20 A This one here, if I can access my notes, if that's
21 okay?

22 Q Yes, that's fine.

23 A 8:52 was hitting -- that tower is located off of I-26
24 and Highway 221.

25 Q And so that's -- is that close to Spartanburg?

CHRIS JOHNSON: DIRECT EXAMINATION

769

1 A Yes, sir.

2 Q So if you're heading up I-26, the 221 exit is closer to
3 Spartanburg from Enoree?

4 A Yes, sir.

5 Q And at 10:58 was that the same tower or a different
6 tower?

7 A No, sir. That tower was located at -- I believe it was
8 Harper Road and I-26.

9 Q Is that in Spartanburg or closer to -- closer to
10 Enoree?

11 A I believe that is closer to Spartanburg.

12 Q And then at 11:19, as we reflected before on Exhibit
13 144 her phone's hitting again on the tower by the house at
14 11:19 p.m.?

15 A Yes, sir.

16 Q And if we could -- is that reflected on this chart?

17 A It is, sir. Right here in grey.

18 Q After 11:41 are there any other towers that night that
19 Theia McArdle's phone hit off of?

20 A Yes, sir. At 12:22 a.m. on December 30th it accessed a
21 tower here at these coordinates which on the map it showed
22 up in Newberry, which was the area consistently downtown, or
23 in the city.

24 Q So close to the city in Newberry --

25 A Yes, sir.

1 Q -- her phone is hitting off a tower at 12:22 p.m.?

2 A A.m.

3 Q I'm sorry. And that would be on -- at that point,
4 December 30th, so it's crossed over into the next day,
5 right?

6 A Yes, sir.

7 Q And the call to that number, it's -- could you just
8 publish for the jury what number Theia McArdle's phone
9 called?

10 A Yes, sir. It made an outgoing call to [REDACTED].

11 MR. STUMBO: You can return to the stand. I'm almost
12 done.

13 (Whereupon, the witness returns to the witness stand.)

14 MR. VERNER: Not a problem. 145 without objection. If
15 the State offers it, it's without objection.

16 MR. STUMBO: Judge, we would offer it into evidence at
17 this time.

18 THE COURT: Without objection, State's 145 will be in
19 evidence.

20 (Whereupon, State's Exhibit No. 145 was admitted into
21 evidence.)

22 Q I'm going to set this here. Agent Johnson, if you
23 could look at that and tell me, do you recognize this area?

24 A Yes, sir. This is downtown Newberry. This is actually
25 Main Street running down the middle in red. And then the

CHRIS JOHNSON: CROSS-EXAMINATION

771

1 cell tower that we just talked about at 12:22 a.m. is to the
2 far left corner of that map.

3 Q So this is Main Street running down in red here,
4 right?

5 A Yes, sir.

6 Q This red running back up is Nance Street, correct?

7 A I believe that's either Nance or College Street. I
8 believe that is Nance Street. Yes, sir. You're right.
9 It's Nance Street.

10 Q Nance Street is the street the police -- city police
11 department and fire departments are?

12 A Yes, sir.

13 Q And so, the cell tower that Theia McArdle's phone is
14 hitting off of at 12:22 p.m. is there a cell tower right
15 kind of in that area behind the police department?

16 A Yes, sir. It is. It's right off of Alexander Street
17 is where the tower is located. Right in the corner and
18 Alexander and Fair Street.

19 Q And that's collected in State's 136 in those call logs?

20 A Yes, sir. 12:22 a.m. Yes, sir.

21 MR. VERNER: Just for my record keeping. Did you all
22 offer that in?

23 MR. STUMBO: We did.

24 MR. VERNER: And it's number what?

25 MR. STUMBO: 145.

1 MR. VERNER: 145 is the blowup map?

2 MR. STUMBO: Yes, sir. Beg the Court's indulgence.

3 Thank you, Agent Johnson. No further questions. Please
4 answer any questions Mr. Verner may have for you.

5 CROSS-EXAMINATION

6 BY MR. VERNER:

7 Q Are you from the Whitmire, Prosperity or --

8 A Newberry.

9 Q -- Newberry?

10 A Newberry, sir.

11 Q Now, I understand that learning how to run these
12 programs and the technical stuff is pretty complicated, but
13 actually looking at the map and seeing different locations
14 for towers, that's fairly common sense, isn't it?

15 A Not completely. Again, what you have to run into when
16 you start getting into the sectors is looking at the compass
17 headings and what they call a ping, which tells you what
18 size the sector is so that you can narrow down whether that
19 tower is, you know, a strength of a mile, three miles, 15
20 miles. It just depends on the network area.

21 Q That's the question I had. These -- when you said the
22 towers, basically the radars are kind of triangular --

23 A Yes, sir.

24 Q -- and you will get a signal --

25 A No. It'll be a cone.

1 Q A cone?

2 A Yes.

3 Q But you'll get a signal off of one of the three sides
4 of it --

5 A Yes, sir.

6 Q -- or sectors?

7 A Yes, sir.

8 Q Is it possible that -- I don't know. Do telephone
9 signals hit at a harder streak the closer they are to the
10 tower and the further away they're like waves? They're
11 lighter the further away they are, or do they -- it just
12 detects a ping from that side?

13 A It depends on the environment, whether it's tall
14 buildings, pine trees, water. Anything like that can make a
15 signal go further, make it go shorter.

16 Q So even if it is a harder signal it could be misleading
17 because of the topography of the ground?

18 A Well, there's not really a -- it doesn't give you a
19 signal strength.

20 Q Okay. That's my question. Does it give you a signal
21 street how close?

22 A No, sir.

23 Q Are you familiar with where the house is in Enoree?

24 A Yes, sir.

25 Q There's a Valero gas station, we heard, about a mile

1 down the street from that?

2 A I haven't mapped it out to see exactly where it falls
3 within that sector.

4 Q If phone calls -- do you know how far apart these cell
5 phone towers are planted?

6 A They -- again, they vary. I would have to map all the
7 other towers in the area to get -- to give you a good
8 reasonable information.

9 Q If a call were made from the Valero gas station which
10 is about a -- which is on the interstate --

11 A Yes, sir.

12 Q -- near that house, could that also be hitting off of
13 that same cell tower 34.603?

14 A Again, without mapping it and being able to see where
15 it actually falls within that sector I couldn't tell you.
16 Because it could hit that same tower but be a separate
17 sector of the tower.

18 Q Okay. My question right now is, is it possible that
19 you could be about a mile away and still hit the same side
20 of the sector?

21 A Again, without mapping it I have no way of knowing for
22 sure. Some towers yes, some towers no.

23 Q I'm not asking you in this particular case. I'm just
24 asking you in general could you hit the same tower and be as
25 far apart as a mile away?

1 A Possible.

2 Q And you analyzed the cell phone records from the
3 evening of December 28th -- I mean, December 28th?

4 A Yes, sir. 29th and --

5 Q Well, it seems to start around 10:30 in the evening on
6 December 28th.

7 A It may be. I think the only thing that I mapped was
8 for the night of the 29th and 30th.

9 Q But the records from T-Mobile start --

10 A Yes, sir. They go back.

11 Q And that might just be kind of like bank records.

12 That's their closest date that that file -- particular style
13 --

14 A Right. It depends -- you know, a lot of times we'll
15 ask for, you know, a few hours, or a day ahead of what we're
16 actually looking at to make sure that we gather -- some
17 companies will report their times in UTC time versus eastern
18 standard time. So to make sure your timeframes are correct
19 you may go a day ahead of what you're actually looking for.

20 Q And longitude and latitude are just basically ways to
21 determine map location?

22 A Yes, sir.

23 Q Generally everywhere on the map will have a slightly
24 different longitude and latitude --

25 A Yes, sir.

1 Q -- than everywhere else?

2 A Yes, sir.

3 Q From my review of the records, the cell tower with the
4 longitude -- I just call it 34.603. That's the one that you
5 have listed next to the home?

6 A For the one for today. Yes, sir.

7 Q I show records that that tower was pinged at 1:13 p.m.
8 on the 29th.

9 A Okay.

10 Q Is that -- well, I mean, you can put them on there. Do
11 you have the records where you can -- and you can step down
12 if --

13 A I'd rather do it from here because it shows the entire
14 --

15 Q You're absolutely welcome to. And basically,
16 unfortunately, if you look at it my way you kind of have to
17 use three separate pages to --

18 A Yes, sir. They just don't fit.

19 Q But T-Mobile still does it better than the other
20 people?

21 A Yes.

22 Q Okay. I show the first 34.303 --

23 A 34.603.

24 Q -- 603 was pinged at 1:13 p.m.?

25 A Yes, sir.

CHRIS JOHNSON: CROSS-EXAMINATION

777

1 Q And then it was pinged again at 3:53 p.m.? And is
2 pinged the right term to use, or do you at least understand
3 what my point of that term is?

4 A I understand what you're saying. It's actually access.
5 Because the only time you're actually accessing a tower is
6 during a voice call, or -- it's not that the tower is
7 reaching out to the phone, per se.

8 Q Well, that would be my question. While you're looking
9 at that, SMS on the T-Mobile records means a text message?

10 A Yes, sir.

11 Q What does the MMS stand for?

12 A That's a multimedia message -- or multimedia service.

13 Q So that means more than one recipient?

14 A No. It's just Facebook -- like if you're sending
15 pictures or videos or something like that. Yes, sir.

16 Q So typically SMS is just a simple text message of
17 however many characters?

18 A Yes, sir.

19 Q And MMS is I sent you a picture of my dog out in the
20 yard?

21 A Yes, sir.

22 Q Or anything.

23 A Some type of video. Some type of -- some file other
24 than a standard message.

25 Q Something that's attached to the text?

- 1 A Yes, sir.
- 2 Q Again, I show that the second time that tower was
- 3 pinged was at 3:53 p.m.?
- 4 A Yes, sir.
- 5 Q And then it was pinged at -- is it 5:33 or 6:33?
- 6 A 6:33, sir.
- 7 Q 6:33. And then it was pinged at 7:25?
- 8 A Yes, sir.
- 9 Q And 7:39?
- 10 A Yes, sir.
- 11 Q 8:04?
- 12 A Yes, sir.
- 13 Q 8:11?
- 14 A Not on that same tower. Those coordinates changed the
- 15 numbers as well as coordinates changed at 8:11. It may be
- 16 the same -- it may be the same area. But if you look, your
- 17 minutes to your seconds -- well, this is in digital format.
- 18 But the 34.689 is not that far off from the 603. Depending
- 19 on where that maps out and where that tower is located it
- 20 could be the same location. It could be what they call a
- 21 handoff area.
- 22 Q There was an outgoing voice call at 8:11:53, right?
- 23 A Yes, sir.
- 24 Q I'm sorry. You're right. That actually hit 34.629,
- 25 which would be close but different?

CHRIS JOHNSON: CROSS-EXAMINATION

779

- 1 A Very close. Very most likely.
- 2 Q And that's the 8:11 call?
- 3 A Yes, sir.
- 4 Q And then at 9:35 -- or is it 8:35 or 9:35?
- 5 A Can you scroll down a little bit? 8:35 we have a call.
- 6 Q 8:35 it pings again.
- 7 A Yes.
- 8 Q And then 11:19 would be the next time that tower is
- 9 pinged?
- 10 A Yes, sir.
- 11 Q 11:19, 11:30, 11:34 and 11:41?
- 12 A Yes, sir.
- 13 Q Okay. So those are the times, assuming the owner of
- 14 the phone keeps hitting the same tower, would be in the same
- 15 general area?
- 16 A Yes, sir.
- 17 Q But the phone -- that phone is used at different
- 18 locations at 1:54 in the afternoon on the 29th?
- 19 A They very well may. Yes, sir.
- 20 Q And that would be the tower that has the 491 longitude?
- 21 A 496.
- 22 Q 496?
- 23 A Yes, sir.
- 24 Q And that's at 1:54 p.m.?
- 25 A Yes, sir.

1 Q So we know that sometime between 1:13 in the afternoon
2 and the next time that tower 34.603 is hit, which is 3:53 --
3 well, actually there's another call at 2:25 which pings off
4 of tower 545, right? So there are two calls at 2:25?

5 A Yes, sir.

6 Q And that's the tower that's beyond decimals 545?

7 A Yes, sir.

8 Q And then the next -- so between 1:13 and 3:53, which is
9 the next time tower 603 was hit we know that somebody was
10 gone from at least 1:54 to 2:25?

11 A Possibly, yes.

12 Q And theoretically as long as 1:13 to 3:53?

13 A Possibly. Yes, sir.

14 Q Then the next time a tower other than the one closest
15 to the home is hit is at 8:11, and that's tower 629?

16 A Yes. The coordinates 6289.

17 Q And so we -- unfortunately text messages and other
18 files don't trigger location readings?

19 A Yes, sir.

20 Q So it's possible that somebody might have been away
21 even when the -- that's not using the phone. So 8:11 we
22 know that person was at a different location, and we know
23 that the person was at a different location at 8:15 p.m.,
24 right?

25 A Possibly. Yes, sir. It could be a different location.

CHRIS JOHNSON: CROSS-EXAMINATION

781

1 Q But then the tower is pinged again -- the tower closest
2 to the home is pinged again at 8:35 p.m. So that puts the
3 person back in the original -- if I assume that is the home
4 of Theia McArdle, she's back home at 8:35?

5 A Consistent with the -- yes.

6 Q But then between 8:35 and 11:19 p.m. the owner of that
7 phone, which is Theia McArdle, assuming she has the phone,
8 we know at least twice between 8:35 and 11:19, for a fact,
9 that between 9:52 p.m. and 10:58 p.m. Theia would not have
10 been at home, or would have been at least a different tower
11 location?

12 A She was servicing a different tower. 659 and 603 is
13 probably close enough they could service the same area. But
14 again, without mapping the handoff area I couldn't tell you
15 for sure.

16 Q But it's consistent with her being at a different
17 location?

18 A It is a different tower. Yes, sir.

19 Q So it is possible between 8:35 p.m., which is when the
20 closest tower to the home was hit, and 11:19 p.m. when it
21 was hit again, knowing that there were two separate towers
22 in between there, that Theia could have been away from that
23 home?

24 A Yes.

25 Q And then we know that there was a phone call to

1 Newberry. You're aware that 940 is typically a Newberry
2 cell phone number?

3 A Yes.

4 Q Used to be just 276, but now there's a host of them.

5 At 11:41 p.m. there was a call made from what appears to be
6 the tower closest to Theia McArdle's home?

7 A Yes, sir.

8 Q And then at 2:22 the same phone is used in Newberry?

9 A 12:22.

10 Q Okay. And so, how long is the -- did you actually have
11 to drive to the home in Enoree, or to the tower to --

12 A No, sir. No, sir. I was able to map it.

13 Q Do you have a ballpark idea of how long -- how far away
14 Enoree is from Newberry?

15 A No. It's not

16 Q You can sit down, Agent Johnson.

17 (Whereupon, the witness returns to the witness stand.)

18 Q Do you know is Enoree closer to Spartanburg than to
19 Newberry from Spartanburg or

20 --

21 A I would venture to say it's closer, yes, sir, from
22 experience.

23 Q And I believe when the Solicitor asked you about a
24 couple of those calls that you indicated they were close --
25 they were made from areas -- the towers were at least closer

CHRIS JOHNSON: CROSS-EXAMINATION

783

1 to the Spartanburg area than the Newberry area?

2 A Yes, sir.

3 Q Are you familiar with the Roadway Inn in Spartanburg?

4 A No, sir. I'm not.

5 Q So you didn't test the locations of the towers? The

6 other towers that got hit?

7 A No, sir. I did not.

8 Q So basically from your records -- at least from your

9 maps, we know if Theia -- assuming Theia is the one using

10 her own phone --

11 A Yes, sir.

12 Q -- you can tell us pretty much when we believe she's

13 home, or somebody using her phone is home?

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q But you didn't make any maps about when that person

16 would not have been at home?

17 A No, sir. Not prior to the night of the 29th I did not.

18 Q But -- and I'm going to sum up with this, Agent

19 Johnson. But you would agree with me just -- and this is

20 summary, what I believe you agreed with earlier, that it's

21 possible between 1:13 p.m. and 3:53 clearly Theia was out of

22 the home at least some portion of that period of time?

23 A Possibly, yes.

24 Q Assuming she's the one using her own phone?

25 A Yes.

1 Q Likewise, between 8:04 and 8:35 Theia pinged from a
2 location other than the home?

3 A Yes.

4 Q Between 8:35 and 11:19 Theia pings twice from a -- or
5 whoever's using her phone pinged twice from outside the
6 home?

7 A Yes, sir. An area consistent with outside.

8 Q And then 11:41 would be the last time Theia McArdle had
9 been at that -- or whoever used that phone has been at that
10 residence?

11 A It appears. Yes, sir.

12 MR. VERNER: Thank you, Agent. I appreciate it.

13 THE WITNESS: Thank you.

14 MR. STUMBO: Nothing further.

15 THE COURT: Agent, thank you very much. You may step
16 down. You are free to go.

17 (Whereupon, the witness stepped down from the witness
18 stand.)

19 THE COURT: Ladies and gentlemen, we are at a lunch
20 break. I'm going to ask that you be back, please, at 2:00
21 to get started as quickly as possible after everybody is
22 assembled.

23 Again, don't discuss the case over lunch. And I'm
24 going to be straight with you. I'm a little bit concerned
25 that -- I'm going to discuss with the attorneys in a moment

1 how much longer we have in the State's case in chief.
2 Obviously the Court has tried to be fair to all concerned
3 and to both sides, and I'm trying to be fair to you guys,
4 too. We may not get this case to you tomorrow though.
5 Okay? I don't know if that means come back on Saturday or
6 if it means come back on Monday. I know, like you all, I've
7 got plans for the weekends. You all probably got plans for
8 the weekend. We'll think about that. We'll talk about that
9 and we'll see where we are. Okay? I was promising you we'd
10 be done with this by Friday. I've never, ever had this
11 happen before where I've had to break that promise. So I'm
12 sorry if I do have to break it. But I'm just giving you
13 fair warning. Okay? Have a pleasant lunch and I'll see you
14 all back at 2:00

15 (Whereupon, the jury exited the courtroom at 12:58 p.m.)

16 THE COURT: We're at ease until 2:00

17 MR. STUMBO: Judge, we only have two witnesses left,
18 so.

19 THE COURT: All right. Which will take us until 5:00.
20 And I'm not going to cause Mr. Verner to cram his entire
21 case in one day when you have had four. So that's where we
22 are.

23 (Whereupon, a lunch recess was held from 12:59 p.m. to
24 2:00 p.m.)

25

1 THE COURT: Let's have the jury out, please.

2 (Whereupon, the jury entered the courtroom at 2:19
3 p.m.)

4 THE COURT: Let the record reflect that the jury is
5 back and seated. At this point in time, Solicitor, if
6 you'll call your next witness, please.

7 MR. STUMBO: Thank you, Judge. The State calls Dr.
8 Janice Ross.

9 THE COURT: Doctor, if you'll come forward, please, and
10 have a seat.

11 DR. JANICE ROSS, having first been duly
12 sworn, testified as follows:

13 DIRECT EXAMINATION

14 BY MR. STUMBO:

15 Q Good afternoon, Dr. Ross.

16 A Good afternoon.

17 Q You are a pathologist operating out of Newberry, South
18 Carolina?

19 A That is correct.

20 Q And how many years have you been a pathologist?

21 A Forty years.

22 Q And so, you went to medical school. Where did you go
23 to medical school?

24 A Yes, I went to -- I got a Bachelor's degree from the
25 University of South Carolina and I received my MD from

DR. JANICE ROSS: DIRECT EXAMINATION

787

1 Upstate Medical Center in Syracuse, New York where I did
2 further training in pathology. Pathology is a discipline in
3 medicine, as opposed to surgery or pediatrics, where we
4 learn how to diagnose diseases by looking at tissue under
5 the microscope and using the laboratory blood work. We also
6 learn how to do autopsies to find a cause of death. And I
7 did further training there in Syracuse in the field of
8 forensic pathology which is a field -- forensic means legal.
9 So we use our medical knowledge on legal matters in dealing
10 with homicides, suicides, accidents, and even rape cases.
11 That kind of thing. We do a forensic autopsy. We learn how
12 to identify patterns of injury and how to document injuries
13 for the court of law and how to take specimens from the
14 person, from the patient, in order to proceed with
15 toxicology and other studies.

16 Q And so, I'm assuming it's a residency in pathology?

17 A Correct.

18 Q And have spent your career doing pathology work, and
19 particular autopsies?

20 A Yes.

21 Q In a forensic setting?

22 A Yes.

23 Q How many autopsies have you done in your career?

24 A At least 10,000.

25 Q And you work very closely with county coroners across

1 the state?

2 A Yes, I do.

3 Q And so, not just deceased folks from Newberry are
4 brought to you, but bodies are brought from coroners all
5 over the state of South Carolina, correct?

6 A Yes. We do probably about 20 counties of the 46 of
7 South Carolina.

8 Q Have you ever testified in a court as an expert in
9 forensic pathology?

10 A Yes.

11 Q How many times?

12 A About 200 in South Carolina.

13 MR. STUMBO: Judge, we offer Dr. Ross as an expert in
14 forensic pathology.

15 THE COURT: Any objection?

16 MR. VERNER: No objection, Your Honor.

17 THE COURT: Again, ladies and gentlemen, as I
18 explained, I guess it was on Tuesday with Dr. Holaday,
19 normally when a witness testifies they have to testify about
20 something they observed, heard, et cetera, and they're not
21 allowed to give opinion testimony, but an exception to this
22 rule exists for experts. In this case, the State and the
23 Defense agree that Dr. Ross is an expert in the field of
24 forensic pathology, therefore she can give opinions in that
25 area. She can give opinion testimony and also state the

DR. JANICE ROSS: DIRECT EXAMINATION

789

1 reasons for her opinion. It doesn't mean you have to accept
2 it, but it is evidence that you may use as you deem
3 appropriate.

4 Additionally, ladies and gentlemen, let me instruct
5 you, and I started doing this when the pathologist
6 testifies, but very often, and I anticipate during the
7 course of Dr. Ross' testimony, certain photographs may be
8 shown to you depicting the injuries to the three-year-old
9 that's involved in this particular case. Sometimes people
10 have a difficult time with those images. Understand that
11 these images are being displayed solely to demonstrate the
12 injuries sustained by the child in this case. Okay? That
13 is the only reason that these images are being shown to you.
14 And obviously sometimes they do evoke a emotional or an
15 unsettling reaction in those people who have viewed them.
16 Okay? And very often that reaction, it's tempting to blame
17 the person on trial for that reaction or to try to do that
18 or consider doing that because you're having that kind of an
19 emotional reaction. That would be inappropriate. Okay?
20 Again, these images are simply going to be shown to you for
21 purposes of explaining the injuries that the child in this
22 case suffered. All right?

23 Solicitor, you may continue, sir.

24 MR. STUMBO: Thank you, Your Honor.

25 Q Dr. Ross, as part of your job as a forensic pathologist

1 did you have occasion to do an autopsy on a little toddler
2 named Minor back in 2014?

3 A Yes, I did.

4 Q And that was 8:00 in the morning on December 30th,
5 2014?

6 A Correct.

7 Q When you do an autopsy do you take pictures?

8 A Yes, sir. We receive the body in the morgue at
9 Newberry County Memorial Hospital in a body bag. We open
10 the body bag and we do external photographs, take inventory
11 of what clothing or personal belongings there are, and then
12 we take the clothing off and do an external examination
13 front and back.

14 MR. STUMBO: If I may approach Dr. Ross.

15 THE COURT: Please.

16 Q Dr. Ross, I'm going to hand you what's been marked for
17 ID as State's No. 85 through State's No. 120 in sequential
18 order. If you could, just take a look at those photographs.

19 A Yes, these are photographs of -- at the autopsy, and it
20 looks like maybe in the emergency room, of Minor

21 Q These would document the external injuries, Dr. Ross,
22 that you had just discussed. The pictures that were taken
23 off the body?

24 A Yes.

25 Q And if you could, Dr. Ross, make sure you speak up in

DR. JANICE ROSS: DIRECT EXAMINATION

791

1 the microphone.

2 A Yes.

3 Q Do they fairly and accurately depict the body of young
4 Minor the morning you conducted the autopsy?

5 A Yes, it does. They do.

6 Q Pictures are taken for the purpose of the exterior of
7 showing bruises or other contusions, injuries on the outside
8 of the body before you do the internal examination?

9 A That's correct.

10 MR. STUMBO: Your Honor, at this time we'd offer
11 State's 85 through 120 into evidence.

12 THE COURT: Have you shown the -- I assume you've
13 already looked at these, Mr. Verner, and --

14 MR. VERNER: I think those are the ones we talked
15 about, Your Honor. But the State's -- I think I objected to
16 one of them and we --

17 MR. STUMBO: I think that's in the next set. That's in
18 the next set of pictures.

19 THE COURT: Right.

20 MR. VERNER: I think the Court ruled, Your Honor, on
21 that.

22 THE COURT: Without objection, 85 through 120 are in
23 evidence. I think the only one that the Court had concern
24 with is in the next batch.

25 MR. STUMBO: Correct.

1 THE COURT: All right. Go ahead.

2 MR. STUMBO: Thank you, Judge.

3 (Whereupon, State's Exhibit Nos. 85 through 120 were
4 admitted into evidence.)

5 Q Dr. Ross, we're going to --

6 MR. STUMBO: And permission to publish to the jury at
7 this time.

8 THE COURT: Please. And, Dr. Ross, if you need to step
9 down so that you can view the monitor right behind you, go
10 right ahead.

11 Go ahead, Solicitor.

12 (Whereupon, the witness stepped down from the witness
13 stand.)

14 Q Starting on State's 85, Mr. Bentley. Dr. Ross, the
15 first photograph. If you could, just as we go through the
16 photographs, explain to the jury relevance and what you see
17 in the picture that is of note.

18 A Yes. Basically here we see a bruise on the left
19 forehead, a little bit of an abrasion on the left cheek, and
20 there is an abrasion under the chin here.

21 Q Any injury that you see on the outside of the body is
22 something that you want to document via photograph?

23 A Exactly. And there are some bruises around the eyelids
24 also.

25 Q This one over the left eye appears to be -- would that

DR. JANICE ROSS: DIRECT EXAMINATION

793

1 be a bruise, Doctor?

2 A Yes.

3 Q 86.

4 A Again, it's an abrasion of the -- which is a little
5 scruff of the surface of the skin on the left cheek.

6 There's no pattern to it. It could be from a fist or
7 something like that. And there's a little scratch there.

8 Q 87.

9 A This just shows again the bruise, the abrasion.
10 There's bruising here around the left eyelids and the right
11 eyelids.

12 Q 88.

13 A Here we see the same bruises, plus another bruise on
14 the right forehead up towards the hairline.

15 Q 89.

16 A There's some bruising here. I think we'll see it
17 better in --

18 Q 90.

19 A -- a photograph. Bruising here. There's no pattern to
20 it. Again, it could be a fist or a kick. A small bruise
21 here.

22 Q Okay. Doctor, and correct me if I'm wrong, but the
23 bruise closer up to the rib cage is the same one we saw on
24 the last picture?

25 A Correct. There's some small bruises here.

1 Q 91.

2 A This is the penis, which is purple, and the scrotum.
3 The left scrotum is purple and bruised. There's bruising
4 that continues around here. And internally there was
5 bleeding and bruising around the urinary bladder.

6 Q And in the internal examination we have some
7 photographs that you took depicting that as well?

8 A Yes.

9 Q 92.

10 A This is the belly button, of course. This bruise on
11 the left -- on the right side. I'm sorry. And a little bit
12 of bruising here.

13 Q 93.

14 A This is how we received him in the morgue with the
15 shorts and a diaper underneath. Bruising here, and here,
16 and here.

17 Q 94.

18 A A small bruise on the knuckle of the right hand.

19 Q 95.

20 A It's some irregular abrasion here that's -- it looks
21 almost like it has a pattern to it, but it's nothing
22 specific that I could tell.

23 Q 96.

24 A This is the buttocks. The right side. Shorts pulled
25 down. This is over the right hip area. Again the bruising

DR. JANICE ROSS: DIRECT EXAMINATION

795

1 without a specific pattern. When I'm talking about pattern,
2 I talk about like a line. If you were hit with a baseball
3 bat you end up with lines, or something that's squared.
4 There's no specific pattern.

5 Q 97.

6 A 97, the back. There's a little bruising here, here,
7 and up here on the right shoulder. When somebody has some
8 pigmentation it's difficult to see bruises a lot. So when
9 we cut into it and look at the fatty tissue underneath you
10 can see a couple more small -- smaller bruises.

11 Q And just -- just for the jury's education here. This
12 large dark area right above Minor's buttocks, is that --

13 A No.

14 Q -- is that a bruise or is that something else?

15 A That's the coloration. But no, it's not a bruise.

16 Q 98.

17 A Small punctate abrasion, and one up here. This is the
18 right ear and chin. Nothing specific. No pattern again.

19 Q 99 looks like a duplicate of what we saw before, so I'm
20 sorry for that.

21 MR. STUMBO: Go to 100, please, Walter.

22 Q And this is just the other side? The left side of
23 Minor

24 A Yes.

25 Q This marker now by his left forearm, are those markers

1 that you all use?

2 A This is out number. Autopsy number. It means forensic
3 autopsy 2014 and it's number 977 for the year.

4 Q It has a little ruler at the top for you to measure?

5 A Yes. Give you an idea of -- and this is six inches.

6 Q 101.

7 A There you can see the bruising around the penis and the
8 scrotum and the left groin.

9 Q 102.

10 A Same thing.

11 Q 103.

12 A Same thing.

13 Q 104.

14 A It's the left elbow area. There's some bruising there
15 which may be -- may or may not be a defense wound. A
16 defense wound is just what it says. Somebody who sees
17 something coming and they're trying to defend themselves.

18 Q And that would be something you look for as a normal
19 human reaction to protect themselves would be use the
20 forearm?

21 A That's correct.

22 Q 105.

23 A It's a face shot. Again, you can see some bruising
24 around this part of the eyelids. The right eyelids. A
25 bruise here and a bruise here.

DR. JANICE ROSS: DIRECT EXAMINATION

797

1 Q 106.

2 A Again, the back. I think some of this is livor mortis.
3 Blood pools by gravity when you die. It's not circulating,
4 obviously, so it will settle down according to gravity. So
5 if you're found dead on your back then the livor mortis is
6 going to be on the back.

7 Q That's sometimes called lividity?

8 A Correct.

9 Q And that's this large dark area right above --

10 A That's why it looks dark.

11 Q 107.

12 A This is on the top of the right shoulder. Again a
13 bruise without specific pattern.

14 Q 108.

15 A That is on -- this is the buttocks again, the right
16 side. This is the bruise on the right buttocks here and
17 here. A slight scratch there also.

18 Q And I believe 109 appears to be --

19 A The same thing, but it shows the -- usually the
20 person's upside down. The buttocks here, the head would be
21 down that way. This is along the right rib cage area, and
22 this is the right hip.

23 Q 110. That would just be a -- we saw this bruise
24 earlier, but you have the little ruler up there now to see
25 the size of it? Is that why that's there?

1 A Yes. We place our little rulers, when you take a
2 closeup shot, such that the head is above the number, so we
3 can orient where we are. Same thing.

4 Q 111.

5 A This gives you an idea of where the bruises are.

6 Q And 112.

7 A This is an abrasion of the skin underneath the chin.

8 Q Did you all kind of put his head back to be able to see
9 the full --

10 A Yes.

11 Q -- neck?

12 A Yes.

13 Q 113.

14 A That's a scar. I believe it was on the left side of
15 the -- one side of the neck. It's just a scar I think.

16 Q No way to tell how old that is?

17 A No. Well, a scar is either a month old or three years
18 old.

19 Q 114.

20 A Again, the penis and the scrotum. The groin area.

21 Q 115.

22 A It's a little scar. Those are the scars that -- again,
23 it's hard to -- we don't know how old they are.

24 Q 116.

25 A This is Minor's back and buttocks. We can see a

DR. JANICE ROSS: DIRECT EXAMINATION

799

1 little bit of bruise here and here.

2 Q 117.

3 A Upper back. A bruise here on the right shoulder. A
4 smaller one on the left. Over the left shoulder blade. One
5 down toward the buttocks.

6 Q 118 is the next one.

7 A Again, this is the left leg, the right leg, the penis,
8 the scrotum. And this is around the left groin area.

9 Q The size and coloration of this bruise, is that
10 significant to you, Dr. Ross?

11 A It's large. Again, it covers a lot of area. I can't
12 -- there was no pattern to tell what it was.

13 Q Would it have required a large amount of trauma to this
14 area to cause this kind of bruising?

15 A Yes.

16 Q 119.

17 A Another closeup shot of the left side of the face.
18 There's bruising here and here. There's a little abrasion
19 on the left cheek.

20 Q And 120.

21 A It shows the bruising on the right side of the
22 forehead.

23 MR. STUMBO: Okay. You can return to the stand
24 briefly, Dr. Ross. Just a couple of questions.

25 (Whereupon, the witness returned to the witness stand.)

1 Q After you'd done the external -- external examination
2 of **Minor** what is remarkable to you about the injuries
3 that you find at that stage?

4 A Just the fact that there were multiple of them and on
5 different parts and sides of the body. In other words, if
6 you fall you're only hitting one part of the body. But
7 because he had bruises back and front, head, chest, abdomen,
8 back and groin area, it means multiple blunt force injuries.

9 Q And the fact that there's multiple injuries in the
10 torso area and the head, as far as your analysis of whether
11 these injuries were caused accidentally or non-accidentally,
12 what's the relevance of injuries to the torso?

13 A It could be -- with this many bruises in different
14 areas of the body I cannot put it together as an accident.

15 Q In other words, when you have an accident, typically
16 it's to maybe the limbs or the head?

17 MR. VERNER: Your Honor, I would -- respectfully,
18 that's a leading question.

19 THE COURT: Sustained.

20 MR. STUMBO: I'll rephrase.

21 THE COURT: You can rephrase that.

22 Q If you have an accident which causes a great amount of
23 injury, where would you expect to find those on the body for
24 a fall, for example?

25 A A fall you would find just one side of the body, one

DR. JANICE ROSS: DIRECT EXAMINATION

801

1 part of the head. For instance, if you hit your head,
2 you're going to hit it on one side. Not back and front.
3 And the head -- to explain that further. I'm sorry.

4 Q That's fine.

5 A You can see it from the outside. But once you saw the
6 skin underneath you could tell there was a lot of bruising
7 on the left side of his head and on the top of the head.

8 Q As far as the large -- I think we covered this briefly.
9 You've done a lot of autopsies in your career. Is this
10 normal for a child to have genitals that are just what
11 appear to be swollen?

12 A No.

13 Q Dr. Ross, after conducting this thorough examination of
14 **Minor** at that point did you go to get inside of the body
15 to figure out what's going on there?

16 A Yes.

17 Q I'm going to hand you what's been marked as State's 121
18 through 126, and 128 through 131. So I believe it's 10
19 pictures overall. If you could just briefly look at those,
20 Dr. Ross. Are these a fair and accurate representation of
21 the internal pictures -- or some of the internal pictures
22 that you took of **Minor's** body?

23 A Yes.

24 MR. STUMBO: Judge, we'd offer 121 through 125 -- or,
25 excuse me, 121 through 126 and 128 through 131 into

1 evidence.

2 MR. VERNER: Can I just quickly double check those,
3 Your Honor?

4 THE COURT: Yes. Give me those numbers again. 121
5 through --

6 MR. STUMBO: 121 through 126 and 128 through 131.

7 THE COURT: Mr. Verner, let me see you and the
8 Solicitor up here real quick sidebar, please.

9 (Whereupon, a sidebar was held.)

10 THE COURT: Subject to Mr. Verner's earlier motion, 121
11 through 126 and 128 through 131 are in evidence.

12 (Whereupon, State's Exhibit Nos. 121 through 126 and
13 128 through 131 were admitted into evidence.)

14 MR. STUMBO: Thank you, Your Honor. Dr. Ross, if you
15 could just step down briefly again.

16 (Whereupon, the witness stepped down from the witness
17 stand.)

18 MR. STUMBO: 121, Mr. Bentley.

19 A This is an example of one of the bruises we could see
20 better once we lifted up the skin. This is the fat
21 underneath the skin. This is on the right abdomen. This
22 shows, again, a non-patterned bruise.

23 Q 122.

24 A When we open up the stomach area, what we call the
25 abdomen, You know it as the stomach in general, we have --

DR. JANICE ROSS: DIRECT EXAMINATION

803

1 you can see the liver, part of his stomach, and these are
2 intestines. And this bloody area is what we call the
3 mesentery. It supports the intestines, and there's a lot of
4 blood vessels going back and forth through this -- this
5 mesentery to feed the intestines. Now, behind all this is
6 the backbone. So if somebody is hit in the abdomen, what
7 you all might say stomach, you might not get a big bruise on
8 the stomach itself, but what you do is you're pushing the
9 organs inside against a stiff backbone and you cause
10 crushing of blood vessels. We had actual tearing of part of
11 the intestines. And further on you see some other bruising.

12 Q Does it appear that the intestine area, this area of
13 the mesentery, the blood there, I believe it's -- would be
14 hemorrhaging, or internal bleeding for lack of a better
15 term?

16 A Yes. Yes.

17 Q And I believe you said that it appeared as if the
18 intestines had maybe ruptured against the spine?

19 A There -- it's hard to see. But this is like pancreas.
20 There's -- within here is the bladder. The first part of
21 the small intestine comes after the stomach. The stomach
22 empties into the duodenum, and the duodenum sits right
23 against the backbone. And when that was pushed in it
24 actually lacerated that organ. So the duodenum was torn,
25 yes.

1 Q Any other bruising in this area that was significant?

2 A No.

3 Q 123.

4 A Again, this is the liver, this is the gallbladder. It
5 just shows the bleeding in that same area.

6 Q 124.

7 A This is the stomach wall that's bruised. And I don't
8 -- I've never seen the stomach bruised.

9 Q You've done 10,000 autopsies?

10 A I've never seen the stomach bruised before.

11 Q You actually had internal bruising of the stomach.

12 125, what are we looking at here?

13 A Well, it's not a good picture. But it's part of the
14 duodenum of the small intestines that I took out and it
15 shows the tear.

16 Q The tear is --

17 A After I washed it off.

18 MR. STUMBO: We're going to go to 126 now, Mr. Bentley.

19 A This is the inside of the scalp just to show some
20 bruising here. Some bruising over here. This would be the
21 left side. This would be the right side. The top of the
22 head here.

23 MR. STUMBO: 128, Mr. Bentley.

24 A This is the back. The scalp on the back of the head
25 and it shows some bruising here and here.

1 Q 129.

2 A A little bit there.

3 Q Oh, I'm sorry. Go ahead. What did you say, Dr. Ross?

4 A A little bit there. The back -- this would actually
5 relate to closer to the top of the head. This would be left
6 under -- behind the ear area.

7 Q 129.

8 A This is the brain. This is the top of the skull that
9 was taken off. And this is blood that would be on top of
10 the brain in what we call the subdural space.

11 Q Can you explain to the jury what subdural means?

12 A Yes. You can tell there's a little membrane here.
13 It's a thick membrane and -- let me back up. There's the
14 brain and there's the arachnoid membrane, which is like
15 Saran Wrap covering your brain. And then there's a space,
16 which is called the subdural space. And then you have the
17 dura -- dura mater, the thick membrane that's right next to
18 the skull. So the subdural space is between the brain and
19 the arachnoid membrane and the subdural membrane.

20 Q Does subdural mean below the surface closer to the
21 brain?

22 A Yes.

23 Q And the term subdural hematoma, what is that? Or
24 subdural --

25 A It means that a pool of blood that has been released

1 from blunt force injury of the head. It tears little blood
2 vessels in this space and causes hemorrhage. The brain is
3 in a closed spot. It's in the skull, and there's no room
4 for anything extra. So if you get extra volume like blood,
5 you're putting a lot of pressure on the brain, and you go
6 through a series of -- probably you have headache, and then
7 you might go into having nausea and vomiting, and then you
8 go unconscious.

9 Q So as you get blood coming out onto the brain it's a
10 slower process of the body reacting to that? Is that kind
11 of maybe --

12 A It's -- that's the reaction as more and more pressure
13 gets on the brain.

14 Q 130. What is this, Dr. Ross?

15 A This probably won't mean much to you. But this is the
16 top of the skull turned upside down. Again, this is the
17 dura membrane, and these are pools of blood in there. It
18 shows again subdural hemorrhage.

19 MR. STUMBO: And I believe the last one is 131, Walter.

20 A Yeah, this is the back after we looked under the skin.
21 These little areas of hemorrhage are just from pulling the
22 fat away. But this is the real hemorrhage. It's a real
23 bruise. And I thought -- I think there was one up here.

24 MR. STUMBO: You can return to your seat.

25 (Whereupon, the witness returns to the witness stand.)

DR. JANICE ROSS: DIRECT EXAMINATION

807

1 Q Now, Dr. Ross, you've mentioned before in reference to
2 the injury to the genitals that there was internal injuries
3 that, I believe, were associated with that; is that correct?

4 A Yes. The force was hard enough so that there was
5 actually bleeding around the urinary bladder under -- under
6 the skin there and in the pelvic area.

7 Q You mentioned injuries to the abdomen. There was
8 actual tearing of the small intestines, correct?

9 A Yes.

10 Q I believe you mentioned that there was -- and we saw
11 the picture of the bruising on **Minor's** stomach which was
12 very unusual to you, correct?

13 A Yes.

14 Q Was there any bruising on any other internal organs?

15 A There was bruising in the pancreas, yes.

16 Q The pancreas is located right by the liver; is that --

17 A It goes right along with the duodenum.

18 Q So close to the small intestine and the duodenum?

19 A Yes.

20 Q Let's get now to injuries to the head. You talked a
21 little about subdural hematoma. What is cerebral edema?
22 Could you explain that term to the jury?

23 A That's swelling of the brain. It's after -- it's a
24 reaction after the injury, the blunt force injury to the
25 head, and the subdural hemorrhage.

1 Q Is that -- what's the relationship of that to the
2 hematoma bleeding that's happening in the brain? Is there
3 any relationship?

4 A Well, just all -- both of them indicate a blunt force
5 injury to the head.

6 Q And you found both the bleeding on the brain as we
7 observed earlier, correct?

8 A Yes.

9 Q And also some cerebral edema which, you know, the brain
10 had been swelling as well?

11 A Correct.

12 Q Is there way you can tell, Dr. Ross, how long the brain
13 -- there had been bleeding on the brain at that point?

14 A No. It would be --

15 Q Or before death.

16 A It would be recent. It would be minutes to maybe as
17 much as an hour. The time of death -- the time of injury is
18 difficult. It's very difficult to age a bruise, even
19 microscopically. Although all the bruises looked to be
20 about the same. They were very, very recent. So the only
21 thing that I could analyze as far as time of death or time
22 of injury is the fact that he had food in his stomach still,
23 and he had some -- 100 CCs of liquid and corn kernels.

24 Q So the fact that that material, and the corn kernels,
25 had not yet started the digestive process -- you found those

DR. JANICE ROSS: DIRECT EXAMINATION

809

1 in the stomach; is that correct?

2 A That's correct.

3 Q So the fact that those had not evacuated the stomach
4 into the digestive tract would indicate to you that the
5 injuries to that area occurred shortly after dinner had been
6 -- that food had been consumed. Is that fair to say?

7 A Yes. Your stomach usually empties within an hour. And
8 there's movement of muscles in the stomach and the
9 intestines called peristalsis. It's a wave of muscles
10 pushing food through. And under good -- normal
11 circumstances it pushes food through the stomach within an
12 hour and then it goes through the small intestine and then
13 the large intestine. If there's any injury to cause pain or
14 any injury in the abdomen it can stop that peristalsis. It
15 can stop that motion. And so, the stomach would stay full
16 of food because it wasn't emptying. You can also get a
17 similar result with head injury. It may stop the
18 peristalsis. So I would -- I feel that the injuries at
19 least started probably within a half an hour of his eating.

20 Q So within a half hour of his eating we have these
21 injuries showing up that potentially could cause his
22 digestive muscles to shut down and not move food through?

23 A At least some injuries would have happened at that
24 time, yes.

25 Q There's no way for you to tell as the pathologist

1 whether it's the head injuries or the internal organ
2 injuries that caused that to happen?

3 A Correct.

4 Q Could have been combination of head injuries and
5 internal injuries?

6 A It could be, yes.

7 Q Let's go into more of injuries to the head. How much
8 subdural hematoma did you find in the -- on the brain?

9 A Twenty-five CCs.

10 Q Twenty-five CCs of blood on the brain. Is that -- tell
11 -- if you could, tell the jury what's the significance of
12 that.

13 A Well, it's not huge, but it's enough to, again what I
14 said, cause enough pressure on the brain to cause the brain
15 to be unable to function well.

16 Q I believe you testified earlier if you receive a blunt
17 force trauma to the head that the small blood vessels and
18 the subdura break and that's what causes the bleeding to
19 kind of slowly come out; is that right?

20 A Yes.

21 Q Is there any way to time with certainty how long before
22 the time of death the blunt force trauma occurred to the
23 head?

24 A No. No.

25 Q Did you generate a report after you got done with the

DR. JANICE ROSS: DIRECT EXAMINATION

811

1 autopsy?

2 A Yes, I did.

3 Q And is that the report that you provide to the coroner
4 and to law enforcement?

5 A Yes.

6 Q And that becomes a public record, I guess, at some
7 point through the coroner's office?

8 A It's not a public record, but it's --

9 Q It's a medical record?

10 A Correct.

11 Q You produced one in this case though, correct?

12 A Correct.

13 Q I'm going to hand you what's been marked as State's 149
14 for ID.

15 MR. VERNER: What number?

16 MR. STUMBO: 149.

17 Q Is that your complete report, Dr. Ross?

18 A Yes, it is.

19 MR. STUMBO: Your Honor, we'd offer 149 into evidence.

20 MR. VERNER: How many pages is that report?

21 MR. STUMBO: I believe it's five.

22 MR. VERNER: Let me see the autopsy. No objection.

23 THE COURT: Without objection, 149 is in evidence.

24 (Whereupon, State's Exhibit No. 149 was admitted into
25 evidence.)

1 Q Do you have a copy of this?

2 A Yes, sir.

3 Q Dr. Ross, the front page of your report, is that a
4 summary diagnosis of the cause and manner of death?

5 A Yes.

6 Q And you list, Dr. Ross --

7 MR. STUMBO: If we could pull up 149, Mr. Bentley.

8 Q Dr. Ross, you indicate that **Minor** was age three at
9 the time. In fact, were you able to find out that his
10 birthday was the day you were doing his autopsy?

11 A Yes.

12 Q His third birthday. You indicate here at the top this
13 A through F. If you could read to the jury the types of
14 blunt force injuries that you found.

15 A Yes. They were subdural hemorrhage of the cerebrum.
16 That's the subdural hemorrhage in the skull. Cerebral
17 edema, swelling of the brain. Subgaleal contusions.
18 Subgaleal refers to the tissue underneath the scalp.
19 Bruising of the stomach and pancreas. Hemorrhage around the
20 bladder. Perforation of the duodenum with hemorrhage into
21 the mesentery. And then there were contusions of the face,
22 abdomen, back and upper extremities, and contusion and edema
23 of the external genitalia.

24 Q Based on these multiple blunt force injuries what was
25 your manner of death?

1 A Homicide.

2 Q And cause of death was what, Dr. Ross?

3 A The primary cause of death was respiratory depression.
4 When you have that pressure on the brain, that swelling, it
5 causes pressure on the areas, on the basal -- the base of
6 the brain where there's centers for breathing and heartbeat.
7 So we have respiratory depression because of that, due to
8 the subdural hemorrhage, due to the blunt force trauma to
9 the head, due to the beating.

10 Q And the beating is kind of nondescript here. By
11 beating you're referring to all of those blunt force
12 injuries that we saw above?

13 A Correct.

14 Q Does that include not only the injuries to the head,
15 the beating of the head, the beating throughout the body,
16 including the internal?

17 A Well, on the cause of death it's mostly beating of the
18 head. That was the thing that would be fatal. The
19 abdominal injury could by itself be fatal but would have --
20 may have taken longer. Maybe minutes to hours.

21 Q You just mentioned minutes to hours. Here on the right
22 side where it says interval, Dr. Ross, you've got just this
23 thing as one after the other. You have minutes listed four
24 times there on the interval. You testified earlier that
25 really from your examination there's no way to really time

1 this with any certainty?

2 A No.

3 Q And that's why you don't have any actual number of
4 minutes listed there? Would that be accurate?

5 A Correct. You have to correlate it with the clinical
6 pattern. I mean, what time he ate. What time he started
7 getting -- if he complained of a headache. What time he
8 started having nausea and vomiting. What time he went
9 unconscious. And then once you're unconscious then death
10 would follow shortly.

11 Q Would these types of injuries -- I believe we've
12 touched on this a little bit earlier. And just again, I
13 would ask. These types of injuries to the interior --
14 internal organs, would they cause vomiting in a child?

15 A They could, yes.

16 Q Or a person?

17 A Yes.

18 Q Injuries to the head, would they cause this type of
19 vomiting?

20 A Correct.

21 Q The best time that you really have here, I believe you
22 said within 30 minutes of eating earlier, and that's based
23 on the food in the stomach, correct?

24 A That's when I believe the injury began, and very likely
25 the abdominal injury.

1 Q To a reasonable degree of medical certainty, Dr. Ross,
2 was Minor's death accidental or non-accidental?

3 A Non-accidental.

4 Q To a reasonable degree of medical certainty, are these
5 the types of injuries that would cause a child to suffer in
6 the minutes to hours preceding his death?

7 A Yes.

8 MR. STUMBO: Beg the Court's indulgence.

9 THE COURT: Yes.

10 Q Just wrapping up here, Dr. Ross. If -- just to a
11 reasonable degree of medical certainty based on your
12 training and experience and expertise, a body that's
13 received this number of multiple blunt force injuries, you
14 said the body could be slowly shutting down. Could the body
15 -- is the body continuing to breath during that time?

16 A Yes.

17 Q And once the breathing stops, obviously you have
18 respiratory depression, and that's what will cause you to
19 die because you can't breath anymore, correct?

20 A Correct.

21 Q Would it be possible for a child to during this time be
22 snoring as they're slowly dying from these types of
23 injuries?

24 A Yes.

25 Q Making kind of small noises even though he's

1 unconscious?

2 A Yes.

3 Q And to the layman, they may look from the outside like
4 they're sleeping?

5 A Correct.

6 MR. STUMBO: No further questions, Dr. Ross. Thank
7 you. Please answer any questions that Mr. Verner has.

8 CROSS-EXAMINATION

9 BY MR. VERNER:

10 Q Good afternoon, Doctor.

11 A Good afternoon.

12 Q Now, you're familiar with Dr. Holaday, aren't you?

13 A Yes.

14 Q And you're aware that he's actually the emergency room
15 primary physician in this case?

16 A Yes.

17 Q Just out of curiosity, how long have you had a working
18 relationship with Dr. Holaday?

19 A Well, I've known him since -- probably for at least 10
20 years. I came to Newberry in May of 2000.

21 Q And actually I'm going to ask you questions from this
22 side so we can hear you.

23 A Sure.

24 Q So you've known Dr. Holaday, I assume that's in a
25 professional setting, for about 10 years? It might have

DR. JANICE ROSS: CROSS-EXAMINATION

817

1 been collegial, too, but primarily professional?

2 A Primarily professional, yes.

3 Q Now, Dr. Holaday, you're aware he testified in this
4 case?

5 A Yes.

6 Q Just out of curiosity, have you been following any of
7 the testimony in this case this week?

8 A Shortly, but I don't know what he testified to.

9 Q Well, he was sort of critical of your report where you
10 -- when your interval, the minutes --

11 MR. STUMBO: Judge, I'm going to -- he's pitting the
12 witnesses.

13 MR. VERNER: She's an expert talking about another
14 expert witness.

15 THE COURT: Let me hear the question first and then
16 we'll see where we are. Go ahead.

17 Q You're aware that Dr. Holaday was qualified as an
18 expert witness in emergency medicine?

19 A Yes.

20 Q And that would probably an appropriate qualification?

21 A Yes.

22 Q He criticized the autopsy report for using the minutes
23 in the interval standards. He said that was kind of an
24 arbitrary timing. And I'm sure that's not an attack
25 personally. But is there a reason that you used the term

1 minutes?

2 A Minutes can be one minute or 120. The South Carolina
3 death certificate form asks for an interval of how long
4 between the injury and the death. And as I say, it's very
5 difficult to pin it down because you can't document the
6 clinical course, when he became -- maybe he had a headache,
7 went to nausea, vomiting, went unconscious. We can't
8 document that. But minutes is a general term that's used by
9 all the medical examiner systems.

10 Q Well, that's my question. If another pathologist were
11 to review your report and see the term minutes, is that a
12 term that's standard throughout pathology that another
13 pathologist or a person in that particular area would
14 understand the timeframe?

15 A Absolutely.

16 Q Now, Dr. Holaday indicated that when he sees the term
17 minutes as a doctor he thinks it's 10 minutes or less. Is
18 that what you meant by that?

19 A That's not correct.

20 Q And certainly his focus on medicine is different than
21 your focus of medicine?

22 A Yes.

23 Q I'm asking you, if I were another pathologist in your
24 area and I saw the interval of death between respiratory
25 depression and the hemorrhage and it's minutes, that could

1 be up to two hours?

2 A Yes.

3 Q But at least a minute, but anywhere between two hours.

4 Is there any -- in Exhibit 149 the --

5 MR. VERNER: May I have 149, Mr. Bentley.

6 Q But basically the first page of your autopsy report is
7 really kind of broken down into three parts, isn't it? The
8 kind of top, middle and bottom?

9 A Yes.

10 Q The top is just really biographical information of who
11 did what on what day and whom?

12 A It just has the name of the patient, the descriptors --

13 Q Okay.

14 A Descriptors, yes.

15 Q The middle is basically a broad or general overview of
16 all the injuries to the body of the child that you're doing
17 the autopsy on?

18 A Correct.

19 Q And then the specific findings are the ones on the very
20 bottom?

21 A Yes.

22 Q And those are specific to cause of death?

23 A Correct.

24 Q And again, the term homicide doesn't necessary mean
25 murder, does it?

1 A The use of homicide -- the manner -- the manners of
2 death are five. There's natural death, whether you have a
3 heart attack, accident, suicide, homicide or undetermined,
4 if you can't determine. Homicide just means a life taken by
5 another through an act or through inactivity.

6 Q It primarily means that somebody was killed by another
7 person?

8 A That's correct.

9 Q If somebody -- and I'm not applying this at all in this
10 case, but homicide is justified and sometimes they're not?
11 Such as self-defense would be a homicide that would be
12 legally justified?

13 A That's correct.

14 Q But you found nothing in this case to show self-defense
15 or any kind of justification? This was just a beating of a
16 small child?

17 A I found one self-defense wound. But no, I can't tell
18 intent from the autopsy.

19 Q You've got minutes written four times in the intervals.
20 The minutes between the respiratory depression, the minutes
21 between the subdural hemorrhage due to the blunt force
22 trauma to the head, and then due to the beating.

23 A Correct.

24 Q Those aren't compounded? That's basically -- that's
25 one minute to two hours between number one and number four?

DR. JANICE ROSS: CROSS-EXAMINATION

821

1 A Could be, yes.

2 Q If there was something that caused another injury at
3 another timeline you would indicate that in your report?

4 A Well, this is what we put down, because the coroner's
5 sign death certificates. And the way that this death
6 certificate is laid out you can't put two things on one
7 line. So as I said, without the head injury, the abdominal
8 injury could have been fatal by itself.

9 Q To a reasonable degree of medical certainty, would the
10 child have died from the abdominal injury?

11 A Yes.

12 Q How long?

13 A It depends on whether they got medical help or not.

14 Q Well, I mean, if he didn't get medical help how long
15 reasonably could a child survive ?

16 A It could have been minutes to hours.

17 Q What do you mean by hours? What would be a reasonable
18 range of hours?

19 A Well, if you got -- with a perforated intestine you can
20 get peritonitis and you may -- may succumb from that within
21 24, 48 hours.

22 Q The injuries to the body that that child had left
23 untreated, two days would be a possible life expectancy?

24 A Possible.

25 Q Could be one day?

1 A Possible.

2 Q Possible to a reasonable degree of medical science --

3 A Correct.

4 Q -- or certainty probably. But the head -- the injuries
5 to the head is a different matter?

6 A Yes.

7 Q And that's why you distinguish the head injury from the
8 rest of the injuries?

9 A Correct.

10 Q Because that was Minor's immediate cause of death was
11 the injury to the head?

12 A Correct.

13 Q Now, when I saw Minor's head, I saw the bruise, I
14 guess, above his left eye --

15 A Correct.

16 Q -- on the forehead?

17 A Yes.

18 Q And then I saw the bruise just short of his scalp on
19 the right side of his forehead.

20 A Yes.

21 Q And then I think you testified in the refraction of the
22 skin that there was a bruise toward the top of his skull?

23 A That was in that one picture. There was another --
24 there was a picture that I have that wasn't shown -- that
25 showed bruising pretty much on the whole left side of the

1 head.

2 Q In a small pattern or kind of a wide pattern?

3 A Well, two of them. There's one towards the side of the
4 head and one more towards the back of the head.

5 Q My interest is which -- is it possible to show which
6 one of those bruises caused the fatal injury? Which one are
7 you talking about?

8 A No. It's not possible to tell which one was the --

9 Q We heard an officer testify that there was a knot --
10 when he saw the child shortly after his death, there was a
11 knot the officer estimated was about the size of his thumb
12 print, I assume over the left eye, that was swollen. That
13 in itself would not have been necessarily the fatal blow?

14 A No.

15 Q My question is, could it have been one of those blows,
16 or you're pretty sure it was all of the blows he had that
17 caused the hemorrhaging in the head?

18 A It could have been one, the large one on the left side
19 of the head, or the combination of all of them.

20 Q Are you not able to look at the brain and see kind of
21 like the center point of the bleeding on the skull?

22 A No. The bleeding was outside the brain. Sometimes you
23 get contusions or bruising of the brain itself, but those --
24 that was not there. Which is not -- not uncommon.

25 Q So the bleeding was on the outside of the skull, or

1 outside of the brain?

2 A Outside of the brain, inside the skull.

3 Q But it was kind of spread out. It looked to kind of go
4 wherever it can find space, so it spreads out throughout the
5 edge of the skull?

6 A It's in that subdural space.

7 Q But it's not just in one particular area that it's --

8 A No. It does not tell me which injury actually caused
9 that.

10 Q Now, Dr. Holaday, who was the emergency room treating
11 physician, pronounced **Minor** dead at 2:06 in the morning.

12 A Yes.

13 Q He indicated that he probably came in the hospital
14 about 1:38, 1:35 -- they started treating him at about 1:38
15 in the morning.

16 A Yes.

17 Q Now, Dr. Holaday testified in his opinion the child was
18 dead on arrival. Would you agree that that's reasonably
19 possible?

20 A Yes.

21 Q He also opined that the child had been dead at least 15
22 minutes to two hours. Would that be -- and base that on the
23 tone, can you kind of tell how long the body -- the heart
24 has been beating by the color of his skin? Does the skin
25 change color?

1 A Well, it's going to have livor mortis, what we talked
2 about. When circulation stops blood will by gravity go --
3 well, towards gravity. If you're on your back, it's going
4 to settle down on your back. If you're on your stomach it's
5 going to settle on your stomach. And that's what makes the
6 skin a little purple color.

7 Q Now, he also indicated that the tone of the skin -- is
8 tone different than color?

9 A I'm not sure what he's talking about.

10 Q And he also indicated that he basis his opinion on
11 softness of the skin and body. Would he be talking about
12 rigor mortis?

13 A I assume he's talking about rigor mortis. I don't
14 know.

15 Q But if his testimony -- that is his testimony. But if
16 his opinion was the child was dead 15 minutes but no more
17 than two hours prior to arrival, that would be consistent
18 with your opinion?

19 A It's possible. Something like rigor mortis is very
20 inexact. Rigor mortis has to do with the use of energy
21 inside the cells of the muscle. If -- for instance, if
22 you're running from somebody because they're going to shoot
23 you, and they do shoot you, and you've used up all the
24 energy inside your muscles because you've been running, then
25 you can go into rigor mortis within 10 minutes. If you die

1 in your sleep from a heart attack or something, then
2 generally it takes 12 hours to go into full rigor and then
3 another 12 hours to come out of it. So you can't judge by
4 rigor mortis, or livor mortis.

5 Q So you would disagree with Dr. Holaday, or just that
6 you would let him -- you would let him stand on his own
7 feet?

8 MR. STUMBO: It's pitting.

9 MR. VERNER: Again, they're expert witnesses, Your
10 Honor.

11 THE COURT: I think the witness is capable of answering
12 that question. I understand your point. I'll allow the
13 question.

14 A Well, this is my expertise in reviewing -- doing 10,000
15 autopsies, and knowing the clinical history to judge what I
16 see in the body.

17 Q Now, but how long after **Minor's** death did you -- when
18 did you first come into contact with the body?

19 A At 8:00 a.m. that morning. That same morning.

20 Q So that would be six hours after the cause of death?

21 A Yes.

22 Q Or six hours after the pronouncement of death?

23 A Yes.

24 Q If a child -- three-year-old child is bleeding like
25 that, is it possible the child could have lain either

1 unconscious or gone to sleep?

2 A With that head injury they usually go unconscious for
3 some period of time until they finally die, yes.

4 Q With that head injury, would that have knocked the
5 child out almost on contact, or is that something that just
6 kind of would have set in with dizziness and -- or is it
7 possible that child was knocked out with the blow to the
8 head?

9 A It could have gone either way. I mean, you get hit on
10 the head you sometimes have a concussion and blackout,
11 sometimes you don't.

12 Q And is it fair to say that if I slapped the child with
13 my open hand that wouldn't cause injuries to that degree to
14 the head, would it?

15 A If you hit him hard enough it would, yes.

16 Q If it was extremely violent --

17 A Yes.

18 Q -- it could?

19 A Yes.

20 Q More likely would be a closed fist?

21 A Either one.

22 Q So the child would have gone unconscious or
23 semi-conscious fairly quickly after the head injury?

24 A Yes.

25 Q Is there any way to tell with certainty whether the

1 head injuries came first or the body injuries?

2 A No.

3 Q If a child had been beaten to that degree of -- exactly
4 like **Minor** and I didn't see it and the child had
5 been laid in bed or gone to bed on his own, could he appear
6 to be sleeping?

7 A Yes.

8 Q Particularly if it was about midnight?

9 A Yes.

10 Q So unless I was aware of those injuries or saw those
11 bruises I could walk right by a bed with my child with those
12 injuries and not observe it?

13 A Yes.

14 Q And it's fair to say that all the -- just about all of
15 the injuries to the child's body would have been under the
16 normal clothes pattern?

17 A Yes.

18 Q Are you familiar with what Mongolian spots are?

19 A Yes.

20 Q What are Mongolian spots?

21 A They're little extra pigmentation areas usually around
22 the buttocks or the sacral area.

23 Q Are you aware of whether **Minor** Mongolian spots?

24 A I did not see one.

25 Q Are those more prevalent on biracial children?

1 A I don't know.

2 Q Or you don't know?

3 A I don't know.

4 Q Dr. Ross, assuming there's evidence -- we know that

5 **Minor** vomited.

6 A Yes.

7 Q Do you know for a fact that the vomiting was caused by
8 the beating?

9 A By the -- I'm sure -- I'm sorry. By the what?

10 Q Well, if there is evidence introduced that another
11 person at that home was also vomiting that night, if the
12 police have DNA evidence or other evidence of other people
13 vomiting in the same room or the same home, is it possible
14 that **Minor** had picked up a stomach bug or some kind of
15 contagion that the other person had?

16 A It's a possibility, yes.

17 Q So if we have vomit that by DNA they can prove is of a
18 third party, is it possible that some of the at least
19 initial vomiting could have been independent of the beating?

20 A Yes.

21 Q And then the beating would just make it worse, wouldn't
22 it?

23 A Correct.

24 Q If a baby was sleeping -- if a child like **Minor**
25 three-year-old child had been beaten like that and then be

1 put back in his bed or found his way back to bed and was
2 sleeping, if I picked him up to put him in a carseat would
3 he remain in that sleep state or would he kind of be in a
4 semi-awake --

5 A He would probably remain that way. He would probably
6 be limp. And he may have that snoring breathing.

7 Q He might make sounds, but he wouldn't be making
8 comments like I'm fine or answering direct questions?

9 A No.

10 Q So if somebody said I was asking him questions and he
11 was answering me, after a beating like that you would find
12 that inconsistent with your opinion?

13 A Depending on the time. I would suspect not.

14 Q And he certainly wouldn't be struggling with anybody
15 about putting him in the child restraint seat, would he? He
16 would be comatose, or dead or non-reactive, wouldn't he?

17 A If it's -- yeah. If it was minutes or hours after the
18 beating, yes.

19 Q If it had been some time after a beating like that and
20 I was putting him in a child safety seat in a car, he
21 wouldn't be kicking at me, would he?

22 A No.

23 Q He wouldn't be resisting getting in the car, would he?

24 A Not likely, no.

25 Q And he certainly wouldn't be verbally saying he didn't

1 want to go or I'm fine?

2 A Correct.

3 Q And he wouldn't have off and on spells where he kind of
4 was sleeping and then woke up and was responsive and then
5 went back into -- he was incapacitated when he first went to
6 sleep?

7 A Yes.

8 Q By sleep I mean unconscious.

9 A Correct.

10 Q Did you take slides of the tissues, Doctor?

11 A Yes, I did.

12 Q Did you examine them microscopically?

13 A Yes.

14 Q Did you find any kind of cold or virus or any kind of
15 illness in Minor

16 A No. The only thing I saw were the bruises as we
17 described before in the different organs.

18 Q Did you see any of the injuries that would have been
19 bleeding injuries?

20 A I'm not sure what -- I saw bruising which means
21 bleeding into tissue.

22 Q I'm talking bleeding as it's normally understood.
23 Bleeding out of the body. Bleeding on the bed, bleeding on
24 the carseat, bleeding wherever that body was laying?

25 A I wasn't at the scene. I don't know.

1 Q I'm just asking if the injuries were the type that
2 could cause external bleeding.

3 A No.

4 Q So if there was blood it would almost all be internal?

5 A Yes. There might have been a little bit of blood from
6 some of the abrasions, but not a lot.

7 Q So it's possible that the forensic team could have
8 found small blood spots, but you wouldn't expect large
9 bleeding like a bullet wound or a knife wound?

10 A There might have been some bleeding in the urine if he
11 urinated.

12 Q That's another point. There could have been minor
13 bleeding then?

14 A Yes.

15 Q But there was no evidence the child had substantial
16 bleeding on his body?

17 A I don't --

18 Q Externally?

19 A Correct.

20 Q And, in fact, when you got the body the body was still
21 partially clothed?

22 A Yes.

23 Q But even after the doctor had been treating the child
24 he was still at least in his pants and underwear?

25 A Yes.

1 Q Was there feces in the underwear, or in the -- was it a
2 Pull-Up or was it a diaper, or do you recall?

3 A A disposable diaper that we described. No, there was
4 no fecal material.

5 Q Do you recall whether it was a Pull-Up or a regular
6 disposable diaper?

7 A I don't recall.

8 Q Is there any way for you to medically tell how long a
9 beating like that could have taken?

10 A The beating of the head and the abdomen and the
11 genitals altogether?

12 Q Yes, ma'am. If there's a way -- is there a way for you
13 to determine if that would have taken a considerable amount
14 of time or is it something that could have happened pretty
15 rapidly?

16 A It could have happened rapidly.

17 Q Or it could have been stretched out, too?

18 A Yes.

19 Q Is there any way for you to testify to a reasonable
20 degree of medical certainty which one of those is accurate?

21 A No, there's not.

22 Q So your guess would be just as good as anybody else's
23 guess in here?

24 A Yes. Yes.

25 Q You would have to rely on the other evidence,

1 non-medical evidence of a witness or other evidence to make
2 that determination?

3 A That's correct.

4 Q And you'd have to look at timelines, too?

5 A Yes.

6 Q There's been some testimony that the child may have hit
7 his head, back of his head two days earlier that caused his
8 death. Is that possible?

9 A No.

10 Q So if I was telling the police I saw the child bump his
11 head on a coffee table two days prior, that would be, in
12 your opinion, incredible?

13 A I don't believe that would be a cause of death, no.

14 Q It's possible it happened, but it's not what killed

15 **Minor**

16 A Yes, correct.

17 Q The injury to the child's scrotum and penis.

18 A Yes.

19 Q The severe swelling.

20 A Yes.

21 Q Is it possible that was caused by grabbing or punching,
22 or a combination, or can you tell what the cause of the
23 groin was?

24 A There's no pattern, so it could be a fist, it could be
25 a kick, it could be -- there was no pattern to it.

DR. JANICE ROSS: CROSS-EXAMINATION

835

1 Q Were there several injuries to the groin, like a
2 beating, or was all that caused by one blow?

3 A It's hard to tell.

4 Q It could have been all one blow?

5 A Correct.

6 MR. VERNER: Mr. Bentley, may I have 91, please? You
7 can step down, Doctor, if you can.

8 (Whereupon, the witness stepped down from the witness
9 stand.)

10 Q On the child's left leg --

11 A Yes.

12 Q -- it appears to me that there's kind of a roundish
13 bruise, kind of like a tennis ball shaped bruise.

14 A Yes.

15 Q Is that apparent to you, too?

16 A Yes.

17 Q Does that appear to be an independent bruise, or are
18 you saying it's just too inclusive to determine?

19 A It's hard to tell, but it could be two separate ones.

20 Q Do you see any other possible break points in the
21 bruising to that child's testicles?

22 A No.

23 Q Is it possible these are finger marks or separate
24 bruising?

25 A I wouldn't say it -- they could be separate. I

1 wouldn't say fingers, but --

2 MR. VERNER: May I have No. 90, Mr. Bentley.

3 Q Is it possible that these are hand or fingerprints from
4 severely grabbing a child?

5 A It could be. It's hard to say.

6 Q But those would at least be consistent with squeezing a
7 child very hard with strong fingers or --

8 A Well, that's one way it could happen.

9 Q Well, if that's not an accurate, at least, conjecture
10 of it, please tell me. But is that reasonably possible?

11 A It's possible.

12 Q But it can also be -- could it possibly be two separate
13 injuries or that all appears to be one consistent injury?

14 A It looks like one.

15 MR. VERNER: Thank you, Mr. Bentley. Thank you,
16 Doctor. You can sit down.

17 (Whereupon, the witness returned to the witness stand.)

18 Q If a child had injuries like that and I gave the child
19 a bath, is it reasonably possible, in your opinion, to
20 overlook those bruises?

21 A No, it would not.

22 Q Now, Minor had slightly darker complexion than a
23 Caucasian person, but they are still very evident bruising?

24 A Correct.

25 Q Was there any bruising to his buttocks? The butt

1 cheeks, the buttocks, that you saw that was part of this --

2 A Just one small one. On circular one.

3 Q Was that injury to the -- could that have been a
4 separate injury done at a different time or could it have
5 been possibly part of the same thing?

6 A It could have been done at a separate time.

7 Q But your general examination of the child's body
8 indicated to you that all the -- all the significant
9 bruising seemed to have come at generally the same time
10 period?

11 A Yes.

12 Q And that's based on your medical -- not just a hunch on
13 how things happened? That's actually looking at the skin
14 and, I guess, whatever patterns you were looking for as a
15 doctor?

16 A Yes.

17 Q So you would be comfortable saying this wasn't a little
18 abuse inflicted over a long period of time? This was a
19 single incident?

20 A Yes.

21 Q Certainly nothing in 2013 would have contributed to his
22 death?

23 A Correct.

24 Q I know I asked you this, but I just want to make sure.
25 Did you check for other symptoms such as viruses or colds or

- 1 chicken pox or anything like that --
- 2 A We took --
- 3 Q -- when you look at the slides?
- 4 A Oh, yes. We look for anything and everything.
- 5 Q So the child was in good health?
- 6 A Yes.
- 7 Q And again, after a beating like that, after the final
- 8 blow is struck, how long is Minor still able to walk?
- 9 A After the head injury?
- 10 Q And you agree that the head injury was probably the
- 11 final blow --
- 12 A It could --
- 13 Q -- or the fatal blow?
- 14 A Yeah, the fatal blow. I can't say it came first.
- 15 Q Is it possible the head injury came first and somebody
- 16 continued to beat on that child after the head injury?
- 17 A That's a possibility, yes.
- 18 Q Are any of those injuries consistent with performing
- 19 CPR --
- 20 A No.
- 21 Q -- on the child?
- 22 A No.
- 23 Q You wouldn't expect to see that?
- 24 A There were no -- no injuries around the mouth.
- 25 Q If the hospital had put a -- I call it a trach tube or

1 a breathing tube down the child's throat, that would not
2 have caused the damage to the duodenum?

3 A No, it would not.

4 Q And pronounce that word for me one more time?

5 A Duodenum.

6 Q Duodenum.

7 A Yes, sir.

8 Q **Minor** was pronounced dead at 2:06 a.m. You
9 understand that?

10 A Yes.

11 Q But you would agree that that would just be a legal
12 time and not really the actual time of his death?

13 A Correct.

14 Q Can you tell us how many hours before that beating
15 **Minor** would have been in a different -- in a healthier
16 state?

17 A No.

18 Q Could he have been eating dinner, beaten like that
19 around 5:00?

20 A Yes, he could have.

21 Q With those -- with that beating?

22 A Oh, no.

23 Q Prior to the beating -- even with that beating it's
24 possible **Minor** was still in a healthy state at 5:00 p.m.
25 that evening?

1 A Yes.

2 Q Up to how late do you think would be the latest time
3 likely that Minor would be --

4 A I can't tell that.

5 Q Now, would Minor be vomiting with large amounts of
6 vomit like a cereal bowl full or would it be smaller amounts
7 kind of like gagging amounts?

8 A It could be either way. He still had 100 CCs which is
9 probably a couple cups of fluid in his stomach.

10 Q And no question in your mind he had eaten corn?

11 A There were corn kernels in this stomach, yes.

12 Q But they would have been gone by the time of his death
13 if he'd eaten them the day beforehand?

14 A Correct.

15 Q The stomach evaporates -- should be completely
16 evaporated -- be empty within about an hour after eating?

17 A That's correct.

18 Q Does that apply even on a three-year-old child?

19 A Yes.

20 Q So in your opinion, most likely Minor was beating
21 within an hour give or take a little bit of minutes of
22 either side, but he would have been beaten after dinner
23 within about an hour?

24 A Within about a half an hour probably.

25 Q More likely a half an hour?

1 A Yes.

2 Q And then he would have been in a comatose situation
3 from that point on?

4 A At some point, yes.

5 Q Well, I mean, after that head blow, depending on how
6 long the beating took -- you said the food stopped -- had
7 stopped digesting in his body. And so, you were guessing
8 that it took about 30 minutes for him to die after that. Is
9 that what you're saying?

10 A No, sir.

11 Q Or at least for his muscles, the Peridinium to stop
12 pushing the food further?

13 A The injury probably to the abdomen occurred probably
14 within a half an hour of his eating, and that stopped the
15 movement of food flow so that he had food still left in his
16 stomach.

17 Q So if the blow to the head didn't occur close in time
18 to the blow to the abdomen he could have possibly been alive
19 even longer?

20 A Yes.

21 MR. VERNER: I think I'm through. But just let me
22 check my notes.

23 THE COURT: Certainly.

24 Q I did want to ask -- now, you looked at **Minor's**
25 teeth, too?

1 A Yes.

2 Q Did they appear -- I take your report indicates them in
3 natural and fair repair. So none of the teeth had been
4 knocked loose?

5 A Correct.

6 Q And unfortunately, there's no way in your medical
7 report to determine who inflicted the wounds to Minor
8 McArdle?

9 A That's correct.

10 MR. VERNER: Doctor, the Solicitor may have some
11 follow-ups.

12 THE COURT: Can I borrow one or two --

13 MR. STUMBO: Sure. Yes.

14 THE COURT: -- and then let you go and let him go
15 again, please? I just need clarification on something.

16 The last series of questions, Doctor. Are you saying
17 the abdominal injury caused the food to stop digesting, not
18 the cranial injury? Am I understanding that right?

19 THE WITNESS: Either one could do it. But to stop it
20 that quickly I think the abdominal injury would be the
21 primary.

22 THE COURT: And that goes to the bruise on the stomach
23 that you said you've never seen before?

24 THE WITNESS: Correct.

25 THE COURT: Second question. Dr. Holaday testified

DR. JANICE ROSS: CROSS-EXAMINATION

843

1 that when initially -- when the child initially presented to
2 the ER there was some vomit in his mouth but the vomit was
3 not as runny as one would normally expect, but it, I'm going
4 to say, coagulated, although that's probably not the right
5 word. It was thickened in some way. That he found that in
6 the child's mouth. Is that medically significant to you in
7 any way, shape or form in determining time of death or
8 anything?

9 THE WITNESS: It sounds like he's talking about it was
10 partially dried which means it had been there for, I don't
11 -- sometime. Long enough to dry a little bit. I'm not sure
12 what he's saying.

13 MR. VERNER: Your Honor, I don't want to interrupt.
14 But I believe that his precise words were it was like
15 congealed broth.

16 THE COURT: Congealed --

17 THE WITNESS: Well, just thickened. It could be mixed
18 with mucus.

19 THE COURT: So there's nothing medically significant to
20 that that you can think of?

21 THE WITNESS: No, sir.

22 THE COURT: Thank you. Sorry, Solicitor. Go ahead,
23 please.

24 MR. STUMBO: Not a problem, Judge. Thank you. Just a
25 couple on redirect.

1 REDIRECT EXAMINATION

2 BY MR. STUMBO:

3 Q Dr. Ross, Mr. Verner asked you if there was blood at
4 the residence would that be significant. I believe you
5 testified that blood could be in the urine, correct?

6 A Correct.

7 Q Could there also be blood mixed in with the vomit?

8 A Well, some of the -- fluid in his stomach was a dark
9 brown, and sometimes if it's thrown up it appears to be
10 dried blood. So it's -- you know, I didn't see any blood in
11 the stomach.

12 Q With the material of food that was left in his stomach?

13 A That's correct.

14 Q Is it possible though that with the bruising on his
15 stomach that there could be some blood mixed in with vomit?

16 A I didn't - I didn't see any break in the inside of his
17 stomach. It was just a bruise on the -- in the wall of the
18 stomach. So no, I would not expect to be blood in the
19 stomach content.

20 Q Thank you, Dr. Ross. The other -- last question. Mr.
21 Verner asked you --

22 MR. STUMBO: If you could pull up 149 again, Mr.
23 Bentley.

24 Q This area here, Mr. Verner was asking you about the
25 minutes. I believe you said that's the form that you use

1 here. It just has minutes on it, correct?

2 A Yes. I mean, if somebody dies of a heart attack that
3 occurred three days ago then we would put days. But the way
4 the death certificate is -- we do this to give an idea to
5 the coroner who signs the death certificates what to put on
6 it. So when you put time interval in it, it's your best
7 judgment, based on your experience, of how long it took
8 between the time of the injury to the time of death.

9 Q Would you say it could be up to 120 minutes or two
10 hours?

11 A Yes. I mean, and that's just an example. That doesn't
12 -- I mean, minutes just mean minutes.

13 Q And some of these injuries that occurred, 240 minutes,
14 or four hours --

15 A Yes.

16 Q -- from the time of death?

17 A Yes.

18 Q 360 minutes, or six hours from the time of --

19 A It could be. Again, you'd have to -- I'd have to know
20 the clinical correlation.

21 Q Very difficult for you to determine or hint towards
22 that with any medical certainty, correct?

23 A Exactly. But once that injury -- the bleeding starts
24 in the head then you're talking minutes, whether it's five
25 or 60.

1 Q Five or 100.

2 A You know, it's hard to say.

3 MR. SOLICITOR: No further questions.

4 MR. VERNER: Just --

5 THE COURT: Go ahead.

6 RECROSS-EXAMINATION

7 BY MR. VERNER:

8 Q After the head injury, I assume you're using the term
9 minutes because you think that's the most accurate time
10 between injury and death?

11 A Yes.

12 Q And again, just so the jury knows, in your opinion as a
13 pathologist to a reasonable degree of medical certainty,
14 what do you mean by minutes? What range do you think is
15 consistent?

16 A Well, in this type of injury --

17 Q Yes, ma'am.

18 A -- bleeding in the head, when I said one to -- I was
19 just giving an example. It could be five minutes in this
20 particular case. A subdural hemorrhage could be five
21 minutes. It could be 60 minutes.

22 Q So if you felt it had been dragging out over a period
23 of hours you would have used the term hours?

24 A That's correct.

25 Q So logically in your opinion, the child died 60 minutes

1 or less?

2 A After the head injury, yes.

3 MR. VERNER: Thank you, Doctor.

4 THE COURT: No further questions, Doctor. You've been
5 here three times and on the third time you got to testify.

6 I apologize --

7 THE WITNESS: Third time's the charm.

8 THE COURT: -- so much for disrupting your day. Thank
9 you though for your willingness to be here, and you are free
10 to go.

11 THE WITNESS: Thank you.

12 (Whereupon, the witness stepped down from the witness
13 stand.)

14 THE COURT: Ladies and gentlemen, we're going to take a
15 brief break for about 10 minutes, if you want to step
16 outside. My understanding is the State has one final
17 witness. We're going to take that testimony after our
18 break. Again, don't discuss the case, but feel free to move
19 about. I'll see you all shortly, thank you.

20 (Whereupon, the jury exited the courtroom at 3:51 p.m.)

21 THE COURT: Let's go ahead and bring the jury back in,
22 please.

23 (Whereupon, the jury entered the courtroom at 4:28
24 p.m.)

25 THE COURT: Ladies and gentlemen, sorry for the delay.

1 I had to do a couple -- take a couple housekeeping matters.
2 Take care of those in the back. We are, of course, still in
3 the State's case in chief.

4 Solicitor, if you'll call your next witness, please.

5 MR. STUMBO: Thank you, Judge. The State calls Chief
6 Roy McClurken.

7 CHIEF ROY McClurken, having first been
8 duly sworn, testified as follows:

9 DIRECT EXAMINATION

10 BY MR. STUMBO:

11 Q Good afternoon, Chief.

12 A Good afternoon.

13 Q You are currently the chief of police over here at the
14 Newberry Police Department?

15 A I am for the past 10 months.

16 Q How long have you been with the police department?

17 A Thirty-two years.

18 Q And before you were put in the Chief's position what
19 was your rank there?

20 A I was Captain.

21 Q Were you a Captain at the time of this incident when
22 Minor [REDACTED] was brought to the hospital in Newberry
23 deceased?

24 A Yes, I was.

25 Q Did you help work this case with Detective Moore who's

ROY MCCLURKIN: DIRECT EXAMINATION

849

1 here in the courtroom?

2 A I did.

3 Q Who else in the department worked the case with you
4 all?

5 A Lieutenant Kevin Goodman. The chief at that time,
6 Chief Brown was there, Kellie Williams with SLED, Nikki
7 Cantrell with SLED, crime scene officers Oliphant and his
8 partner.

9 Q Who made the decision to call SLED in for assistance?

10 A It was actually Chief Brown at the time that actually
11 requested they come in, but I was the contact person for
12 SLED that morning once I arrived on scene.

13 Q So initially Officer Wood from the hospital police
14 department is the first one on scene from law enforcement,
15 correct?

16 A That's correct.

17 Q Shortly thereafter Detective Moore, you, Lieutenant
18 Goodman get involved in the case as well?

19 A That is correct.

20 Q It took a little while for SLED to get from Columbia
21 during the middle of the night up here?

22 A That's correct.

23 Q And were you able to respond to the hospital and
24 observe **Minor's** body?

25 A Yes, I did.

1 Q This was after the doctor -- ER doctor had declared him
2 to be deceased?

3 A Yes. I'd gotten to the hospital at approximately 4:15
4 a.m.

5 Q And you've been in the courtroom. You've seen those
6 pictures, I believe, State's 1 through 7. Those pictures of
7 **Minor** when he was laying in the ER are the same thing you
8 observed that night as well?

9 A Yes, they were.

10 Q Describe for the jury your observations of his body.

11 A I arrived at the hospital, like I said, at 4:15. I was
12 briefed by the officers who were already on the scene about
13 what they had observed, and I walked into room 3 and I
14 observed **Minor's** body lying on the gurney inside there.
15 He was only in his shorts. I observed the bruising to his
16 body, bruises on his head. The one on is side. And then
17 they began to show me other bruises by pulling his little
18 Pamper down and his pants down and the bruising around his
19 genitalia area.

20 Q And you said bruising of the genitalia. Was it
21 swollen?

22 A Yes, it was very swollen.

23 Q Immediately upon seeing the injuries to **Minor's** body
24 what was your next reaction in terms of your investigation?

25 A That this young child had gone through a severe

1 beating.

2 Q That was right off your first impression?

3 A Right off the bat.

4 Q Now, the Defendant, Theia McArdle, she's in the
5 courtroom here today, what was your first interaction with
6 the Defendant?

7 A At the hospital I just went back into the area where
8 they had them separated. But that was after some time
9 because what happened right when I got there. I went into
10 the room and then saw what was going on. Saw the injuries
11 to the child. At that point I was the contact person for
12 SLED, so I had to actually call the captain with SLED and
13 let him know the resources that I needed. So I proceeded to
14 go out there and talk with him and tell him that I needed a
15 crime scene unit. And he in turn told me that he was also
16 sending two agents, who were with the child fatality
17 division, up to assist me also. At that point in went back
18 inside and they told me where they had Ms. McArdle at and
19 where they had Mr. Bowman at. I walked back in that area
20 and saw both of them and saw they were separated, and at
21 that time told them that we were going to take both of them
22 to the police department to keep them separate.

23 Q Did you have any conversation with them or interview at
24 that time?

25 A No, sir. I did not.

1 Q Did you ultimately participate in the interview of
2 either one of the suspects?

3 A I interviewed, along with Agent Cantrell, Mr. Bowman at
4 the police department sometime later.

5 Q And so, that was -- Agent Cantrell -- Agent Williams
6 has been in the courtroom this week?

7 A Right.

8 Q And you were with her during that interview?

9 A That is correct.

10 Q Did you participate in any search warrants in this
11 case?

12 A Yes. I participated in one search warrant. The search
13 warrant that was executed on the residence in Spartanburg
14 County.

15 Q So did you go obtain the search warrant?

16 A No, I did not. What happened was is when I found out
17 what their address was in Enoree, South Carolina, being
18 familiar with the area, I contacted Laurens County -- well,
19 I had my dispatch Laurens County first and ask them if that
20 address [REDACTED] -- [REDACTED] was in Laurens County,
21 and they in turn told dispatch no, it was not in Laurens
22 County. So I had dispatch contact Spartanburg County and I
23 found out that address was in Spartanburg County. So the on
24 duty supervisor in Spartanburg County for the sheriff's
25 office that night called me and I told him what we had.

ROY MCCLURKIN: DIRECT EXAMINATION

853

1 That we had a child here that was dead by beating and I told
2 him that I was probably -- I was going to need a search
3 warrant to actually search the residence in Spartanburg
4 County. He told me he would assist me by getting that
5 warrant in Spartanburg County for me. I gave him the actual
6 specifics of what was going on, specifics for the search
7 warrant, and he in turn had a search warrant prepared and
8 got a judge in Spartanburg County to sign that search
9 warrant.

10 Q You accompanied Agent Oliphant, who testified earlier
11 in the week --

12 A That is correct.

13 Q -- to the house?

14 A I did.

15 Q And you've been in the courtroom all week. You've seen
16 those pictures of the residence during the search warrant,
17 correct?

18 A That's correct.

19 Q And those are accurate?

20 A Those are accurate and true pictures of pictures taken
21 at that residence that morning -- or that afternoon.

22 Q Ultimately there at the house there were items of
23 physical evidence collected that we've seen pictures of from
24 the house, correct?

25 A That's correct.

1 Q There were also items collected from the vehicle by
2 Agent Oliphant as well?

3 A That is correct.

4 Q And from the house I believe we had a pillow case, in
5 particular, a yellow Coogi tee shirt, correct?

6 A That's correct.

7 Q I'm going to hand you what's been marked in as 162 and
8 163. You've had a chance before Court today to review some
9 of this in the SLED reports, correct?

10 A That is correct.

11 Q And these are cuttings that SLED took from that tee
12 shirt and that pillow case in the house?

13 A That's correct.

14 Q That would be 162 and 163 for the record. Ultimately
15 those were analyzed and submitted for DNA, correct?

16 A That's correct, to SLED.

17 Q I hand you what's been -- 8.1 SLED item and 10.1, which
18 is Exhibits 160 and 161. It looks like 160 is marked as a
19 tee shirt. 161 is marked as a towel. Those items were also
20 collected -- or cuttings from items that were collected and
21 submitted to SLED?

22 A That is correct.

23 Q And of the shirt -- these four items that we just
24 talked about were ultimately tested by the DNA analyst at
25 SLED?

ROY MCCLURKIN: DIRECT EXAMINATION

855

1 A That's correct.

2 Q And then she submitted a report to you for your all's
3 case file?

4 A She did.

5 Q Was there a blood standard that was taken as part of th
6 investigation by SLED from the autopsy?

7 A Yes.

8 Q I'm going to hand you State's Exhibit 164. And is that
9 a swab from the blood standard that was taken from Minor
10 at the autopsy?

11 A That is correct.

12 Q And ultimate it was taken to SLED for comparison to
13 these physical items?

14 A Yes.

15 MR. STUMBO: Judge, we would offer 164 -- excuse me,
16 160, 161, 162, 163 and 164 into evidence.

17 THE COURT: Without objection?

18 MR. VERNER: Could he just call out which each item is?

19 MR. STUMBO: I can, Judge.

20 THE COURT: 160, I think, is the tee shirt cutting.
21 161 is the towel. I missed the 162, 63 and 64 myself.

22 MR. STUMBO: 162, Judge, is the yellow shirt from the
23 house, from the front collar area. A cutting. 163 is a
24 cutting from the pillow case that came out of the residence.
25 164 is the swab from the blood -- from the sample from the

1 autopsy of Minor's blood for DNA comparison.

2 MR. VERNER: Now, 161 is the towel from the home? The
3 Union or the --

4 MR. STUMBO: No, the towel from the backseat of the
5 car.

6 MR. VERNER: Okay. No objection, Your Honor.

7 THE COURT: Very good. All are into evidence.

8 (Whereupon, State's Exhibit Nos. 161 through 164 were
9 admitted into evidence.)

10 Q And you did say you received a report from SLED -- or
11 reports, I should say. I'm going to hand you first what's
12 been marked Exhibit 151 from SLED analyst Corky Thompson.
13 Was that sent to the police department as part of your all's
14 file?

15 A Yes. It was actually sent to me at 1507 Nance Street
16 at the Newberry City Police Department.

17 Q And it's addressed to you?

18 A Yes, sir.

19 Q And then 152, which is from DNA analyst at SLED,
20 Jennifer Claycomb. Is that addressed to you as well?

21 A Yes. It was addressed to the Newberry Police
22 Department, Roy McClurken, at 1507 Nance Street here in
23 Newberry.

24 Q And these became a part of the case file here. And the
25 analysts, we consulted with them this week in preparation

ROY MCCLURKIN: DIRECT EXAMINATION

857

1 for trial, correct?

2 A That's correct.

3 Q Now, 151, his is a serology analysis. Was any blood
4 found on these items out of the house or out of the car?
5 Were any of those positive for blood?

6 A Yes. Five -- item five that's on this list, which was
7 the -- a blood standard. It was the victim's blood. And
8 that was -- well, that was the one that was taken by the
9 SLED agent during the autopsy.

10 Q And they developed ultimately a DNA --

11 A Right.

12 Q -- profile from that blood --

13 A Right. And that was from the towel in the backseat,
14 the item number eight, tested positive for blood and matched
15 the victim's DNA.

16 Q Any of the other items other than the towel in the
17 backseat?

18 A Item 10 was a cutting from the tee shirt, the Puma tee
19 shirt, in the backseat tested positive for blood and matched
20 the victim's DNA.

21 Q How about the tee shirt from the house?

22 A The Coogi tee shirt, which would have been item 16
23 found in the clothes hamper in the Enoree trailer matched
24 the victim's DNA.

25 Q But no blood on the --

1 A No.

2 Q -- Coogi tee shirt?

3 A No, sir.

4 Q And item -- the pillow case.

5 A Yeah, the tan pillow case would have been item 17.

6 Found the victim's -- found on the air mattress where the
7 victim slept, tested positive for blood and matched the
8 victim's DNA, Minor [REDACTED]

9 Q So the Puma tee shirt, towel from the car and the
10 pillow case from the house had blood on them and all of that
11 matched to the DNA of Minor [REDACTED]

12 A That is correct.

13 Q The Coogi tee shirt just had his DNA in the fluids but
14 it was not positive for blood?

15 A That is correct.

16 Q Thank you.

17 MR. STUMBO: Judge, I believe -- did I offer in 151 and
18 152?

19 THE COURT: You did not, but --

20 MR. STUMBO: We would put those in at this time.

21 MR. VERNER: Without objection, Your Honor. I think he
22 did but I'm not 100 percent sure. But without objection
23 either way.

24 THE COURT: 151 and 152 are in evidence.

25 (Whereupon, State's Exhibit Nos. 151 and 152 were

1 admitted into evidence.)

2 Q Now, Chief, would did you walk through this residence
3 in Enoree?

4 A I did.

5 Q And what -- can you just describe for us the -- we've
6 seen the layout of the house in the SLED report. But tell
7 us, where's Minor sleeping in the house?

8 A He's sleeping on an air mattress I guess you would
9 consider the livingroom over in a corner. If you walk
10 through the backdoor of the house, to your left is -- when
11 you first walk in it's the kitchen. If you continue walking
12 straight that's what I consider to be the livingroom area.
13 There's a air mattress over on the left side near a window
14 up against a wall. That is where he's sleeping.

15 Q And the bedroom on the -- there's two bedrooms on
16 either end of the house?

17 A That is correct. One bedroom to the right when you
18 walk in the door at the end of the trailer. The second one
19 is to your left when you walk in the door all the way at the
20 end.

21 Q What's -- which is which? What's in each of those
22 bedrooms?

23 A The one on the right when you first walk into the door,
24 I call it the bedroom the far end of the trailer. That is
25 the room where you heard testimony where the cats were.

1 That is the room that contains cats that used to be
2 **Minor's** bedroom. The one on the far end on the left side
3 when you walk through the door, that is the bedroom where
4 Theia McArdle and Richard Bowman sleeps.

5 Q Those areas of the house were photographed?

6 A That is correct.

7 Q Was that significant in your investigation?

8 A Yes.

9 Q Why?

10 A Because it shows -- I had already had -- during that
11 day I had interviewed Richard Bowman at the police
12 department prior to going to Spartanburg, and he had told me
13 that Theia had moved **Minor** out of that bedroom to place
14 cats in there and move him into the livingroom to sleep.
15 Basically he told me that she had evicted him out of that
16 room and placed cats in there and he didn't think that was
17 right. So I had that knowledge prior to getting there. So
18 I made sure we photographed that that was true and accurate
19 as to what he was telling me, that cats were now in that
20 bedroom instead of the child.

21 Q I'm going to back up a little bit and take us back to
22 the hospital. Did you observe the Defendant's car, Ms.
23 McArdle's car, at the hospital?

24 A I did.

25 Q Where was it -- where was it parked?

1 A It was parked at the -- if you're familiar with
2 Newberry Hospital, and I can show you on a diagram, you've
3 got the canopy there where you go in the emergency room.
4 But at the far end up there where the walking track is and
5 over there where the gazebo is, that's where the car was
6 parked. That's, I would say, a good distance from the ER
7 entrance, but not all the way at the end of the hospital
8 property. But far away from the ER entrance.

9 Q And I'm going to show you what's been marked as 143 for
10 ID. Do you recognize this map --

11 A I do.

12 Q -- in this overhead? What is this?

13 A This is the area or shot of Newberry Hospital, the
14 parking lot. This would be Evans Street behind the
15 hospital. This would be Kinard Street in front of the
16 hospital. This street down here, this is Pond Field Road.
17 That's actually White Oak Manor Hospital. And this is what
18 they call the Atrium that has doctors offices and so forth
19 in it. Out of this area here would be over towards Wilson
20 Road.

21 Q It had the shopping there as kind of the front of the
22 hospital?

23 A That is correct. Food Lion and all of that.

24 Q So you obviously have a very good familiar knowledge of
25 the hospital and it's surroundings?

1 A Thirty-two years worth.

2 Q Yes, sir. And this fairly and accurately depicts that
3 area?

4 A That is correct.

5 MR. STUMBO: Judge, we'd offer 143 into evidence.

6 MR. VERNER: Without objection, Your Honor.

7 THE COURT: Without objection, 143 is in evidence.

8 (Whereupon, State's Exhibit No. 143 was admitted into
9 evidence.)

10 MR. STUMBO: Now, Chief, if you could step down. And
11 just keep your voice up for the court reporter.

12 Q I believe one of the pictures in evidence, I think -- I
13 don't have it in front of me, as the gazebo at the hospital.
14 Where is the gazebo?

15 A The gazebo is right in this area here. You can see the
16 top of it here.

17 Q The gazebo is in this corner?

18 A That is exactly correct.

19 Q And where is the car Theia McArdle parked in that
20 parking lot?

21 A It would be right in this area here.

22 MR. VERNER: Could I ask them just to more centralize
23 the exhibits so we can see what he's pointing to?

24 THE COURT: If you need to step over next to the
25 Solicitor, go ahead. Yeah, you're fine.

1 Q You pointed right here in kind of the middle between
2 this red car and where the gazebo is in this --

3 A Yeah, right in this area here.

4 Q Now, this is an overhead satellite image. It's not of
5 the exact date and time of this incident, correct?

6 A That is correct.

7 Q Now, tell me though. This parking lot, you were out
8 there in the early morning hours of December 30th when
9 Minor was deceased inside the ER. Was the parking lot
10 full that night?

11 A No, sir. I didn't count the cars, but the parking lot
12 was not full.

13 Q All these parking places here around the entrance of
14 the ER on this side, were they filled out with cars?

15 A No, sir. Because I actually parked over in this area
16 when I came to the hospital that morning.

17 Q And how was Ms. McArdle's car positioned in the parking
18 lot when you found it?

19 A It was backed into a parking space over here.

20 Q Backed into a parking place. And about how far is that
21 -- 100 feet, 200 feet? Can you estimate the distance
22 between the door and where the car was found?

23 A Probably around two to 250 foot.

24 Q And backed into the parking space?

25 A Pardon? Backed into a parking spaces, yes.

1 MR. STUMBO: Thank you. You can step back onto the
2 stand.

3 (Whereupon, the witness returned to the witness stand.)

4 Q Was that significant to you?

5 A Yes, sir. That's -- in an investigation we're looking
6 for things that are not necessarily -- seem out of place to
7 us. That's what we're looking for. That's what I'm looking
8 for. When I get to the -- when I got to the hospital that
9 morning and I'm being briefed as to what is going on and
10 what has happened, and then I go in and see a child in that
11 condition, then that starts me to thinking, okay, what has
12 happened here. What was -- what happened before we got
13 here. So all that's running through my head as to the
14 demeanor of the people bringing the child into the hospital.
15 What did they say. Who did they interact with. Who brought
16 the child into the hospital. What was their demeanor when
17 they brought the child into the hospital. So that's got all
18 of my senses starting up as to what happened before we got
19 there.

20 Q And you all were able to pull the surveillance video in
21 the hospital?

22 A That is correct.

23 Q And those pictures are in evidence. We saw them
24 earlier. That depicts about two minutes 20 seconds between
25 the time Mr. Bowman walks in with Minor and there's that

1 delay, and then she walks in a little bit after that,

2 correct?

3 A That is correct.

4 Q After Richard Bowman and Theia McArdle were interviewed

5 you all had an opportunity to review Dr. Ross' autopsy

6 findings the next day. What was the decision of the

7 investigator team as far as charges?

8 A We had ran down a timeline in talking to both of them,

9 and the timeline show that those two individuals were the

10 only people in the past 48 to 72 hours who had contact with

11 that child, so they were both arrested for homicide by child

12 abuse.

13 Q Were the statements that were given by both of them,

14 did they give you all any explanation as to how this child

15 was beaten to death?

16 A No, sir. None whatsoever.

17 Q And neither one of them?

18 A Neither one of them.

19 Q Both of them in their statements put themselves in this

20 vehicle coming to Newberry, correct?

21 A That is correct.

22 Q Based on their statements alone, both of them were at

23 the house in Enoree during that day, correct?

24 A That is correct.

25 Q And found out through their statements that it was some

1 time that Theia left and took a call in Spartanburg?

2 A That's correct.

3 Q And other than that, during that day they were in the
4 house, correct?

5 A That is correct.

6 Q And you all were able to obtain the phone records as
7 well, correct?

8 A That's correct.

9 Q And after the totality of your investigation it was
10 determined to charge both Theia McArdle and Richard Bowman
11 with homicide by child abuse, correct?

12 A That is correct.

13 MR. STUMBO: Beg the Court's indulgence, Your Honor.

14 THE COURT: Yes.

15 Q Now, Chief, you all also pulled records from the prior
16 incidents between Ms. McArdle and Mr. Bowman, the domestic
17 incidents, right?

18 A That is correct.

19 Q You also pulled DSS information and criminal charges
20 against Ms. McArdle in North Carolina?

21 MR. VERNER: I understand that's been objected to, but
22 that's -- but I object to that April 2013 incident. It's
23 403. It's not relevant. It's character evidence. It's
24 already been testified to, and it's not part of the --
25 unless the State is charging some kind of conspiracy that

ROY MCCLURKIN: CROSS-EXAMINATION

867

1 goes from 4/13. But my understanding is the indictment says
2 the child was killed on December 30th, 2014, so I object.

3 THE COURT: Sustained.

4 Q You did other work on this case to gather information
5 for purposes of your investigation, correct?

6 A That is correct.

7 MR. STUMBO: No further questions, Your Honor. Please
8 answer any questions Mr. Verner has for you, Chief.

9 CROSS-EXAMINATION

10 BY MR. VERNER:

11 Q Chief, good afternoon.

12 A Good afternoon.

13 Q So you went with Agent Oliphant to [REDACTED]

14 [REDACTED] the Enoree address, to execute the
15 search warrant?

16 A I did.

17 Q And it's clear that the only items of value for this
18 DNA were the Coogi tee shirt from the home and then the
19 pillow case that was on the air mattress that the child
20 slept on?

21 A Yes.

22 Q Now, you also found the adult hoodie with vomit on it
23 from the hamper, too, right?

24 A Yes.

25 Q And SLED also analyzed that vomit?

- 1 A I am not sure that is --
- 2 Q Is that not 18 -- 16.1? Item 16.1?
- 3 A No. Item 16.1 is the cutting from the Coogi shirt.
- 4 Q I'm sorry. 15.1. There was vomit on that grey hoodie
- 5 sweatshirt which is -- SLED calls it item 15.1.
- 6 A Yes, sir. They did analyze that.
- 7 Q And they did a DNA test on it?
- 8 A Yes, sir.
- 9 Q And your same report indicates that Minor
- 10 the child, is positively excluded as the source of that
- 11 vomit on that sweatshirt?
- 12 A That is correct.
- 13 Q Another male vomit but not Minor's
- 14 A That's correct.
- 15 Q And who was the only other male who lived in that home?
- 16 A Richard Bowman.
- 17 Q And it's also true that you took a DNA sample of the
- 18 toilet vomit? The vomit in the toilet?
- 19 A That's correct.
- 20 Q But it's fair to say that that was a contaminated
- 21 sample that they could not determine?
- 22 A I'm not sure. But they couldn't determine. Yes, sir.
- 23 Q Well, the report says it's male DNA but can't --
- 24 A Determine.
- 25 Q -- determine whose?

ROY MCCLURKIN: CROSS-EXAMINATION

869

1 A That's correct.

2 Q And it's always disturbing to investigate the death of
3 a child, small child, isn't it?

4 A That is correct.

5 Q But you have been investigating deaths of people of all
6 ages for many years?

7 A I have.

8 Q And you're looking for important details?

9 A I am.

10 Q It is -- and you interviewed Richard Bowman the day at
11 the -- where did you interview Richard Bowman?

12 A At my office at the police department.

13 Q On Nance Street?

14 A That's correct.

15 Q And the SLED Agent Cantrell was with you?

16 A She was.

17 Q And you made some notes and who -- did you both
18 participate in the interview or just you?

19 A We both participated in the interview. But I had to
20 leave at certain points to check on other stuff and then
21 come back.

22 Q Richard Bowman, when you first spoke to him, indicated
23 that he and **Minor** were alone at the residence and Theia
24 left to go to the store, and that is when **Minor** had the
25 incident about pooping in the bathtub?

1 A That was his initial statement to me. Yes, sir.

2 Q And, in fact, that was also -- you've seen the notes
3 that Cantrell made contemporaneously with yours?

4 A Correct.

5 Q That was also her recollection of --

6 A Yes.

7 Q On December 30th Richard Bowman said, "When I hit the
8 child **Minor** had already left for the night -- or gone to
9 the store"?

10 A You mean Theia.

11 Q Theia. I'm sorry.

12 A Yes.

13 Q Who did I say?

14 A **Minor**

15 Q And that's something when you have two suspects in a
16 crime, I would imagine that is something that would stand
17 out to an investigator and that's one of the reasons you
18 noted it in your report?

19 A That's correct. Anything that they tell us in an
20 interview is important to us.

21 Q Particularly who was there at what time?

22 A That's correct, because we're trying to establish a
23 timeline and who's with the child.

24 Q Is there any direct evidence that you have that Theia
25 -- other than the testimony of Richard Bowman, that Theia

ROY MCCLURKIN: CROSS-EXAMINATION

871

1 McArdle, mother of Minor is the one who inflicted these
2 wounds?

3 A No, sir.

4 Q Now, you've got the circumstantial evidence of the
5 timelines and the fact that the car was parked backwards in
6 a parking lot. But that's not direct evidence that Theia is
7 the one who inflicted these wounds, is it? That's just one
8 individual fact that you've taken in basically consideration
9 of everything?

10 A It brought some concern to me. Yes, sir. That's why I
11 noted it. Yes, sir.

12 Q But you would consider that more circumstantial
13 evidence? Just a few of all the circumstances of what's
14 going on?

15 A Yes, sir.

16 Q That's just one fact to be weighed among many?

17 A Correct.

18 Q If I could -- if the Solicitor doesn't mind, could you
19 mark with this pink, just a little circle where Theia's --
20 well, circle the gazebo first.

21 A (Witness complies)

22 Q So the Gazebo is on this part of the edge of the
23 parking lot?

24 A That's correct.

25 Q And this looks like this might be a playground or

1 something behind there?

2 A Yes, that is a playground.

3 Q And then draw an X where you recall Theia's car was
4 parked.

5 A Okay. This is not exact. I'm just going area.

6 Q I know you don't know the exact parking space, but just
7 --

8 A (Witness complies).

9 Q If you could draw just a slightly bigger X.

10 A (Witness complies).

11 Q So the T shaped building is the hospital?

12 A Yes.

13 Q And the parking lot appears to be four rows of cars?

14 A In both areas, yes.

15 Q On both areas?

16 A Yes.

17 Q And Theia was on the fourth row away from the main
18 entrance?

19 A That's correct.

20 Q Parked backwards?

21 A Backed into the parking space.

22 Q And, in fact, when I looked at those photographs there
23 seemed to be several cars that were kind of parked backwards
24 in there.

25 A That's correct.

1 Q Did you ever run the tags on Theia's car?

2 A I don't know if I ran the tag on her car, but somebody
3 had to at some point.

4 Q If people had expired or improper tags are they more
5 likely to park -- this is just as your experience as a 30
6 year police officer. But when people have expired tags are
7 they more likely to park a little bit more -- I don't want
8 to say secretively. But could that be a factor in how
9 somebody parks a car?

10 A Not in a parking lot. No, sir. Because we wouldn't do
11 anything about a car parked in a parking lot with expired
12 tags. They would try to conceal it if they were driving it
13 or something like that.

14 Q So it would be -- you would think it would be unlikely
15 that somebody who knew they had improper tags would kind of
16 conservatively, or consciously park where they wouldn't be
17 seen?

18 A I wouldn't think a mother's whose child is in the ER
19 would take time to back a car in a parking space to conceal
20 a tag if that child is unconscious in the hospital. I would
21 think they wouldn't be worried about that.

22 Q Yes, sir. I understand that. But the -- at the time
23 -- well, you don't know what was going through Theia's mind
24 at all at the time?

25 A No, sir. I do not. But, I mean, you brought up that

1 point.

2 Q I'm just asking you whether -- I don't know. But I'm
3 just asking you whether something who was driving around
4 with improper tags would think that maybe I don't want -- I
5 might get in trouble if the police see my tags.

6 A Well, if somebody's whose child is not in the emergency
7 room unconscious might think of that. But somebody who was
8 -- has a child that just went in the emergency room
9 unconscious, I wouldn't think they would be trying to
10 conceal that tag from law enforcement.

11 Q If they knew the condition of the child was serious,
12 deathly, they'd certainly be more likely, wouldn't they?

13 A Possibly.

14 Q Did you take part in the video -- my understanding is
15 Richard Bowman performed one of these reenactments with
16 Agent Cantrell with you at the police station and he
17 indicated what he did that evening?

18 A You're talking about the one back at the fire
19 department similar to the one that Theia did?

20 Q Yes, sir.

21 A No, sir. I was not back there for that reenactment.

22 Q So you -- that was not part of your interview?

23 A That part of that reenactment was not done in front of
24 me. That day I was actually -- as captain of the police
25 department over investigations I was actually talking with

ROY MCCLURKIN: CROSS-EXAMINATION

875

1 other people to put things in place that were needed. So
2 that happened while I was actually talking with the
3 investigator in Spartanburg about whether the warrant was
4 ready for the trailer and all that. So I was having to do
5 dual roles.

6 Q Have you seen it?

7 A Have I seen that reenactment? No, sir. I have not
8 seen --

9 Q Do you think that that reenactment might be beneficial
10 to the jury to see Richard, what Richard said at the time?

11 A I didn't see the reenactment. I don't know.

12 Q Or his demeanor? Richard -- now, when you did your
13 interview with Richard he was not technically under arrest
14 at that point in terms of in handcuffs or in legal custody?

15 A No, sir. He was not in handcuffs or in custody or
16 anything like that.

17 Q But he was, I assume, in your office in a conference
18 room at the police station?

19 A He was actually in my office.

20 Q And it was you and the SLED agent?

21 A Me and Nikki Cantrell. Yes, sir.

22 Q He told you that he hit the child and the child went
23 head first into the bathtub, didn't he?

24 A That is correct.

25 Q Then at some point he said he gave Theia -- I mean,

1 Minor a bath and then the child went to bed. Do you have
2 your report in front of you?

3 A Yes, sir. I do.

4 Q And it says, "And Minor was fine. Bowman stated that
5 he went to the other room to watch TV and left Minor in
6 the bathtub by himself."

7 A Yes, sir. That's in my notes.

8 Q "He seen that Minor finished his bath and got into
9 bed."

10 A Yes, sir.

11 Q And then he says that's when Theia came home after the
12 job --

13 A That's correct.

14 Q -- in Spartanburg.

15 A Yes, sir.

16 Q And then that's when she said we wanted to go -- she
17 wanted to go -- or should she go to Newberry?

18 A That is correct.

19 Q So Richard Bowman's initial story puts Theia out of the
20 home, at least during the -- when Richard says he hit the
21 child?

22 A That is correct.

23 Q He also indicated to you that he didn't park at the
24 house of the young man here in Newberry. That they kind of
25 parked down the street a little bit?

ROY MCCLURKIN: CROSS-EXAMINATION

877

- 1 A Up the street is what he said.
- 2 Q Up the street?
- 3 A Yes, sir.
- 4 Q And Bedenbaugh is not a particular long street, is it?
- 5 A No, it is not.
- 6 Q Richard indicated to you that he had noticed the child
- 7 stop breathing several times why Theia was in the house
- 8 alone with the man?
- 9 A That's correct.
- 10 Q But that the child woke and said he was fine?
- 11 A That is what he told me. Yes, sir.
- 12 Q Richard indicated to you that he honked the horn
- 13 several times?
- 14 A Yes, sir.
- 15 Q And that when Theia came out she talked with the man
- 16 for a little bit?
- 17 A That's correct.
- 18 Q And that's when he first told Theia that there was
- 19 something wrong with her child?
- 20 A That is correct.
- 21 Q Now, when Theia looked back and said oh shit when she
- 22 saw the stuff coming out of the child's nose?
- 23 A Yes, sir.
- 24 Q Was the child restraint seat -- did you take any part
- 25 in the search of the Chevy Malibu?

1 A No, sir. I did not.

2 Q So the photographs were done by another officer?

3 A The photographing of the vehicle and the processing of
4 the vehicle was done by Agent Oliphant and his partner,
5 yeah.

6 Q But you did in the very beginning, or at some point,
7 walk out to see how far the -- where in the parking lot
8 Theia's car was?

9 A Yes. That was still at the hospital. When they
10 processed the vehicle it was at the police department inside
11 the fire department bay out of the rain.

12 Q And I suppose you probably do that in a lot of crimes,
13 burglary, larcenies, if there's a shoplifting at Walmart,
14 you might walk out in the parking lot and see where the
15 people parked?

16 A That is correct.

17 Q And there might be other people with them or there
18 might be other stuff. That's just something that's kind of
19 routinely done?

20 A It is.

21 Q Other than that it's suspicious, is there any other
22 value of the location to where she parked?

23 A You mean as a totality of everything?

24 Q She parked backwards in a spot and it was on the
25 furthest row -- the fourth row from the hospital. Other

1 than that does it have any --

2 A No, sir.

3 Q And, in fact, in the car -- well, you didn't search the
4 car, right?

5 A No, sir.

6 Q Did Richard Bowman ever come back and correct his story
7 with you?

8 A I was here when they did that other interview when him.
9 But now, he never came -- I only interviewed him once, and
10 it was that morning at the police department.

11 Q But you participated to some extent about a month ago
12 when he came in, March 10th?

13 A I was here for a little while. Yes, sir.

14 Q Do you know if you searched Theia's hands or
15 fingernails for bruises or blood?

16 A I did not. I didn't interview her.

17 Q Did you all do that for Richard?

18 A I checked Richard's hands. Yes, sir.

19 MR. VERNON: I think that's about it, Your Honor.

20 Q Richard indicated -- Richard Bowman indicated to you
21 that the child Minor threw up while he was sitting on the
22 master bed. The bedroom and the master room -- bedroom.
23 Did you hear him testify to that?

24 A I heard him testify to that. Yes, sir.

25 Q Do you recall asking him at that time -- or that might

1 have been a detail at that initial interview that wasn't --

2 A I didn't know anything about the throwing up at the
3 house when I interviewed him. No, sir.

4 Q But when you did go to the house in Spartanburg you
5 were looking for signs of that type?

6 A I was looking for signs of throw up and any other stuff
7 when we went to the house. Yes, sir.

8 Q Did you find any vomit or blood on the master -- the
9 bed in the master bedroom?

10 A No, sir. Apparently there wasn't. I was there as an
11 assisting person. Agent Oliphant and his partner collected
12 everything.

13 Q Did you see Oliphant search the bed?

14 A Yes, sir. I saw them go throughout the house.

15 Q Your confident that the bed was examined as well as
16 every other room in the house?

17 A That is correct.

18 Q And, in fact, the items that had vomit on them were the
19 pillow case on the child's bed and clothes that had been put
20 in the hamper?

21 A That is correct.

22 Q And then the other stuff is the stuff in the backseat
23 of the car that was taken to the hospital?

24 A That is correct.

25 Q How long did it take you to drive from Newberry to

1 Enoree?

2 A Approximately probably 20, 25 minutes or so.

3 Q Do police always drive the posted speed limit, or are
4 you all like us that goes slightly over? About 20, 25
5 minutes?

6 A Police time, yes.

7 Q And is it fair to say that it was raining that evening?

8 A No. It was not raining when we went to Spartanburg.

9 Q I meant the evening of December 30 -- the 29th.

10 A When I came out to come out at 4:15 it was not raining.
11 As we were in the hospital it started to rain. When Agent
12 Oliphant and them arrived at the police -- at the hospital
13 it had started to rain then and then it progressively got
14 harder, yes.

15 Q Well, obviously we can see the photographs of the car
16 in the parking lot of the hospital --

17 A Right. There's rain on it.

18 Q -- and it has clearly rained. Is it possible it had
19 been raining the evening of the 29th and you just don't
20 remember, or you're confident it wasn't raining?

21 A I'm confident when I came out of my house it was not
22 raining. And when I got to the hospital it was not raining.
23 But at some point while we were still at the hospital and
24 came out when Agent Oliphant and them got there, which would
25 have been around 6:30 or 7:00 --

1 Q It had started to rain?

2 A -- it had started to rain. Because he talked about the
3 amount of rain they were getting on the way up from
4 Columbia.

5 Q And tell me again what time you arrived at the
6 hospital?

7 A About 4:15 a.m.

8 Q I'm assuming it certainly would have been at least
9 overcast?

10 A Yes, sir. It was -- it was overcast and warm for that
11 time of year.

12 Q Warm for December 30th?

13 A Yes, sir.

14 MR. VERNER: Your Honor, if I could just double check
15 my notes.

16 THE COURT: Yes, sir.

17 Q Now, Chief, when you say that there was no evidence
18 that anybody had been in contact with the child up to 72
19 hours --

20 A Forty-eight to 72 hours is the timeline that I had in
21 speaking with Mr. Bowman.

22 Q Seventy-two hours would be the 27th, right?

23 A That would be correct.

24 Q And we know that Patrice McArdle -- but she didn't come
25 until the following day?

ROY MCCLURKIN: REDIRECT EXAMINATION

883

1 A I believe so.

2 Q So you didn't have the benefit at that time of what she
3 knew?

4 A No, sir. I did not. We didn't talk with her until the
5 31st.

6 MR. VERNER: Chief, I appreciate your testimony. The
7 Prosecutor may have some follow-up.

8 THE COURT: Redirect?

9 MR. STUMBO: Yes, Judge.

10 REDIRECT EXAMINATION

11 BY MR. STUMBO:

12 Q Chief, Mr. Verner brought up the reenactment from Mr.
13 Bowman. Did you all record that?

14 A There was one that was recorded in the fire department.
15 But he one in my office, I don't know if that's the one he
16 was speaking to. That one was not recorded. That's where
17 he showed us how he hit the child while the child was near
18 the bathtub and went forward and struck his head.

19 Q Were you at the reenactment - his reenactment in the
20 bay of the fire department?

21 A No, I was not.

22 Q If you could, Chief, both -- at the time the next day,
23 after both of the suspects had given statements, at that
24 point, based on the injuries you had seen, you didn't
25 believe you were getting the full truth of either one of

1 these suspects, did you?

2 A No, sir. I did not.

3 Q Anybody on the investigative team think you all were
4 getting the full story?

5 MR. VERNER: Your Honor, I think that's improper to ask
6 what other people think.

7 MR. STUMBO: Withdrawn, Judge.

8 THE COURT: Sustained.

9 MR. STUMBO: No further questions, Chief. Thank you.

10 THE COURT: Chief, you can step down. Thank you very
11 much.

12 THE WITNESS: Thank you, Judge.

13 (Whereupon, the witness stepped down from the witness
14 stand.)

15 THE COURT: I know the State had a proffer that they
16 wanted to present. But at this point in time I think it's a
17 good time to take a break for the evening.

18 MR. STUMBO: Yes.

19 THE COURT: So you formally have not rested at this
20 point in time. Mr. Verner, Solicitor, let me see you all
21 over here real quick. Just two seconds.

22 (Whereupon, a sidebar was held.)

23 THE COURT: Ladies and gentlemen of the jury, we're
24 going to go ahead and take a break for the evening as far as
25 you all are concerned. I need court personnel to stick

ROY MCCLURKIN: REDIRECT EXAMINATION

885

1 around. I'm going to want you guys back tomorrow morning at
2 9:30 if you would. I'll need Court personnel and everyone
3 else in here those at 9:00 so that we can address the stuff
4 I was talking about over there at the sidebar. Okay?

5 I'm telling you, ladies and gentlemen, after speaking
6 with the attorneys it's looking more promising to get this
7 case to you all sometime tomorrow. So I'm crossing my
8 fingers. I hope you guys have a lovely evening. Okay?
9 Thank for your continued patience, your continued attention
10 and your continued hard work and enjoy your night, but don't
11 talk about the case. See you in the morning. 9:30, please.
12 When you report back they're probably going to hold you
13 downstairs or some other area or just kind of hang out
14 around the front of the courthouse. They'll find some place
15 for you to be comfortable. Okay? In case we're not done.
16 Thank you. See you in the morning.

17 (Whereupon, the jury was released for the day at 5:17
18 p.m.)

19 THE COURT: The record should reflect that the jury was
20 out. The Solicitor wanted to proffer some witnesses who, I
21 believe, traveled from North Carolina. We did discuss this
22 in chambers. And I'm more than happy to hear the proffer at
23 this particular point in time, Solicitor.

24 MR. DANIEL: Yes, sir, Your Honor. We'd proffer the
25 testimony of Justin Madore.

1 THE COURT: Sir, if you'd come forward, please, and
2 have a seat.

3 JUSTIN MADORE, having first been
4 duly sworn, testified as follows:

5 IN CAMERA

6 DIRECT EXAMINATION

7 BY MR. DANIEL:

8 Q You're Justin Madore?

9 A Yes, I am.

10 Q And you're from where?

11 A Asheville, North Carolina.

12 Q And do you know Theia McArdle?

13 A Yes, I do.

14 Q How do you know her?

15 A I met her through an ex-girlfriend of mine a long time
16 ago. About four years ago. They had like this quarrel
17 going on, so it was kind of like in passing. We started
18 hanging out and stuff when my wife, Megan, came around.
19 That's when I met my wife and Theia and we started all
20 hanging out together.

21 Q You met Theia through an ex-girlfriend? I'm sorry.

22 A Yes, to start with. I met her -- I was told about her
23 basically. It was all through passing. I never really
24 talked to her. Do you understand what I'm saying? I never
25 really talked to her until I physically met her and we sat

1 own and talked when she came to a party that I was at at
2 Brittany Shipman's house, and my wife Megan Cody, was with
3 her.

4 Q So you all had mutual friends --

5 A Yes.

6 Q -- or mutual acquaintances?

7 A Yes.

8 Q And you all would see each other at social get
9 togethers, or what?

10 A That was the first time that we had seen each other in
11 a social get together like that.

12 Q And at the time did Ms. McArdle have a child?

13 A Yes, she did.

14 Q And who was that child?

15 A Minor

16 Q And how old was he when you met him?

17 A When I met him he -- in between 12 and 14 months.
18 Somewhere in there.

19 Q And during that time period that you'd see Theia with
20 her son, Minor did you ever see Minor strike her child?

21 A Yes, I did.

22 Q Can you tell me when that incident was approximately,
23 and where?

24 A In March we were at her house and he had got into a
25 pack of cigarettes --

1 Q March of what year?

2 A 2013.

3 Q And this was at Ms. McArdle's house in Asheville?

4 A Yes, in [REDACTED] Apartments. I don't know the exact
5 address. But she had -- he had got into a pack of
6 cigarettes, just being a kid, you know, and he broke them.
7 Well, she got mad and was like, "Come here you little
8 bastard," and snatched him up by his arm and threw him on
9 the couch, and then grabbed a hold of him and slapped him
10 four times. Then she picked him up, took him into the
11 bedroom. And when she turned around and realized I was
12 watching, she was like, "Was that too hard?" And that's
13 when I told her, "Look, if you have to ask me if it's too
14 hard, it's too hard. Don't you ever hit that little boy
15 like that again or you're going to have a problem on you."

16 Q So you all were hanging out at the apartment?

17 A Yes.

18 Q Were you all partying, drinking?

19 A No.

20 Q Watching sports, anything like that?

21 A No. We were just kind of hanging out talking. I mean,
22 we weren't really -- we weren't doing anything. We weren't
23 like watching TV or nothing. We were just hanging out. I
24 had just started dating my wife. I mean --

25 Q And how -- and so [REDACTED] was how old at this time, to

1 your knowledge?

2 A In between 12 and 14 months. I mean, I was only around
3 there for a two months span, and in a two month's span I saw
4 enough for a lifetime.

5 Q Could this child walk and talk at that time?

6 A He could walk but he couldn't talk. Like he could say
7 maybe one or two words, that's it.

8 Q And what kind of force was applied to this child when
9 he was struck?

10 A I'd say she came back from about here and came full
11 force and smacked that child like a grown man.

12 Q You describe it like a grown man.

13 A Yeah, like two grown men fighting. She hit him like he
14 was an adult.

15 Q Did you report this to law enforcement?

16 A Yes, I did. I called CPS and they took the child out
17 of her custody. And I told CPS if they gave him back he'd
18 either be severely injured if not killed.

19 Q Who's CPS? What agency is that?

20 A That's Child Protective Services in Asheville, North
21 Carolina.

22 Q That's what they refer to it as?

23 A Yes. You can call it DCF. Same thing.

24 Q Did law enforcement interview? A law enforcement
25 agency, like Buncombe PD, anything like that? Buncombe

1 County Sheriff's Office, something like that?

2 A They didn't interview me. They just interviewed me on
3 the phone. They investigated it and I'm assuming that they
4 found due cause because they took him from her.

5 Q And you reported this immediately?

6 A Yes. I reported it that night. And she went that same
7 evening -- I went to work after -- after the incident
8 happened I went to work. When I got off work Joshua Gunter
9 called my phone and told me that Theia was standing in the
10 magistrate's office filing a warrant for my arrest and my
11 wife for being at her house.

12 Q And who else witnessed this besides you?

13 A My wife.

14 Q Anyone else?

15 A A girl named Makayla Jordan.

16 Q And did your wife report this to CPS or --

17 A Yes. We discussed it that evening when I got off work,
18 not knowing that we had warrants. But when I got off I was
19 like, look, this isn't right. It's going to go pretty bad
20 if we don't say something. I don't know what to do at this
21 point, you know, and she said we need to call CPS. So we
22 did.

23 Q And when you -- how did you find out that Minor
24 McArdle had died?

25 A Her.

1 Q How's that?

2 A She posted it on Facebook.

3 Q And eventually you reach out to Newberry Police
4 Department, correct?

5 A Yes, I called them, because I was concerned. And I
6 explained to them what I knew from past experience with her.
7 That I was not around when the murder happened, so I had no
8 idea anything about that. But that, you know, they needed
9 to contact Buncombe County CPS and things like that, and
10 then they asked me to come down.

11 Q And you did come down to Newberry?

12 A Yes, sir. I did.

13 Q And you provided a written statement?

14 A Yes, sir. I did.

15 Q Did you review to any other incidents of abuse that you
16 witnessed while in North Carolina?

17 A I think there were two on the report. Two different
18 ones. One was the incident with the rolled up newspaper
19 smacking him 22 times.

20 Q You saw that?

21 A No. That's the day that she slammed the door in my
22 face and told me to get the fuck out.

23 Q Did you see anything else besides what you just
24 previously told us about?

25 A Those two things. And then him being snatched up on

1 his arm and thrown on the couch and thrown on the bed. And
2 then him getting his mouth covered like this, and her
3 squeezing his nose to make him stop crying because she had
4 smacked him. To try just to calm him down she would cover
5 his mouth and nose until he quite making noise and she'd let
6 go he'd gasp for air.

7 Q And again, what part of the body is she striking him
8 in? Be specific.

9 A In the head, face and the legs.

10 MR. DANIEL: Nothing further, Your Honor.

11 THE COURT: No cross?

12 MR. VERNER: No, Your Honor. Just to verify though.

13 CROSS-EXAMINATION

14 BY MR. VERNER:

15 Q You knew Theia during a two month period in early 2013?

16 A Yeah. Yeah.

17 MR. VERNER: Thank you, Mr. Madore.

18 THE COURT: You can step down.

19 (Whereupon, the witness stepped down from the witness
20 stand.)

21 MR. DANIEL: Your Honor, the last proffer would be
22 Megan Cody.

23 MEGAN CODY, having been first duly
24 sworn, testified as follows:

25 DIRECT EXAMINATION

MEGAN CODY: DIRECT EXAMINATION (IN CAMERA)

893

1 BY MR. DANIEL:

2 Q And your husband is Justin Madore, correct?

3 A Yes.

4 Q You just haven't gotten around to changing your last
5 name?

6 A No, I was in the middle of a probate. I inherited a
7 house. So I didn't want to change anything until I got
8 everything straightened out.

9 Q You and your husband live together in North Carolina?

10 A Yes.

11 Q Tell us that address one more time?

12 A [REDACTED].

13 Q And you know Theia McArdle?

14 A Yes.

15 Q How do you know her?

16 A She actually used to be my best friend. I met her
17 through Josh Gunter and we used to hang out all the time,
18 like on a daily basis.

19 Q Did you know her before [REDACTED] was born?

20 A I met her when she was pregnant.

21 Q So you've known [REDACTED] ever since he was a baby?

22 A Yes.

23 Q And did you ever witness Theia McArdle being abusive or
24 assaulting [REDACTED]

25 A I have. She -- like my husband has said. She used to

1 cover his mouth and nose to make him stop crying. We were
2 on our way to Harrah's one time and had to take **Minor** and he
3 was crying in my backseat and she smacked him in the face.

4 Q And how old was he at this point?

5 A I don't think he was a year. Maybe a year, give or
6 take a little bit.

7 Q So she utilized corporal punishment as a form of
8 discipline?

9 A I guess that's what you'd call it.

10 Q And your husband described an incident about cigarettes
11 being broken?

12 A Yes.

13 Q **Minor** had gotten into her purse?

14 A Yes. Well, they were sitting somewhere in the house
15 and he got into them.

16 Q Just describe that briefly.

17 A Well, he broke her cigarettes. She got pissed off and
18 snatched him up, smacked him, and pretty much everything
19 that Justin said.

20 Q Open hand slap --

21 A Yes.

22 Q -- multiple times in the head area?

23 A Head, face, leg. Pretty much anywhere she could hit.

24 Q And how many times did you see this?

25 A Probably about four.

MEGAN CODY: CROSS-EXAMINATION

895

1 Q Anything else? And when did this incident occur, the
2 broken cigarettes?

3 A It was probably in March.

4 Q Of what year?

5 A Of 2013.

6 Q And **Minor** would have been approximately how old?

7 A A year and some change, three months.

8 Q Anything else significant in terms of witnessing abuse?

9 A Not that I can think of right offhand.

10 Q Did you ever witness Richard Bowman hit this child?

11 A No. I never really seen Richard with **Minor** like that.

12 Like I know Richard. But when Richard was around **Minor** was
13 actually in South Carolina with Ms. Janice.

14 Q Did Theia McArdle ever tell you that Richard Bowman was
15 abusive toward **Minor**

16 A No, not ever. I didn't really talk to her after her
17 and Richard got together.

18 MR. DANIEL: Nothing further, Your Honor.

19 THE COURT: Any cross?

20 MR. VERNER: Just to clarify.

21 CROSS-EXAMINATION

22 BY MR. VERNER:

23 Q She got together with Richard about March of 2013?

24 A March, April. Something like that. Something like

25 that. We -- she talked to him over the phone. But when she

1 started like going to be like hanging out and stuff I didn't
2 really talk to her after that. She had left her kid with my
3 aunt and my uncle while she went down there to Fayetteville
4 to hang out with him for two weeks.

5 Q But timeframes is just what I'm interested in. That
6 would be March or April of 2013?

7 A Something like that.

8 MR. VERNER: Thank you, Ms. Cody.

9 THE COURT: Thank you. You may step down.

10 (Whereupon, the witness stepped down from the witness
11 stand.)

12 THE COURT: For the reasons we were discussion in
13 chambers, Mr. Verner, do you want to put this on record
14 while you're opposing -- I'm assuming the State is seeking
15 to offer this in it's case in chief at this point?

16 MR. STUMBO: We would, Your Honor, under Lyle.
17 Identity exception, being the primary Lyle -

18 MR. VERNER: Your Honor, at this --

19 THE COURT: Wait. Which exception are you citing?

20 MR. STUMBO: The identify of the perpetrator in the
21 future event, Judge. We believe obviously this goes far
22 beyond the -- just simple propensity of it, which is
23 obviously inadmissable. We think the question in this case
24 ultimately -- one of the question in this case is who's
25 abusing this child. And the fact that this Defendant so

1 violently abused this child when he was 15, 16 months old
2 and had the child taken, we do think is relevant here. So
3 for purposes of identity, Judge. And we believe that's one
4 of the -- and there again, I don't have the rule book in
5 front of me. 404(b), I believe there's five exceptions.
6 Identity being one. There's probably most case law on that
7 particular Lyle exception than any other one, Judge. But,
8 of course, absence of the State -- or accident as well I
9 think could be applicable, more heavier towards the identity
10 part.

11 THE COURT: Well, we're dealing with a few bits and
12 pieces here. The first point that I want to make is that
13 obviously they've already heard testimony about the DSS
14 investigation, the four cigarettes, the slapping. So the
15 jury is already aware of that testimony. There was some
16 additional testimony offered by Mr. Madore about being
17 thrown and things of that nature. I don't know that that
18 was necessarily part of the DSS -- I'm saying DSS. Child
19 Protective is what I meant to say. But the North Carolina
20 equivalent to DSS. I don't know if that was part of the
21 reports. You all have been privy to those reports. Was
22 that included as part of the findings?

23 MR. VERNER: That was part of the April 2013 DSS case,
24 Judge. I think he indicated a second time, which was when
25 he said he saw her with the newspaper multiple times. But

1 that was part and parcel of the April 2013 DSS case, which
2 was the only time that North Carolina DSS had a founded
3 case.

4 MR. STUMBO: It was also in their statements to SLED
5 and Newberry when they were interviewed as part of this
6 investigation, Judge, when they gave witness statement.

7 MR. VERNER: I would just note that, one, the jury has
8 already heard it from multiple sources. Probably most
9 probatively from Patrice McArdle. So no one's disputed it.
10 My understanding under *Lyle* is to offer it as absence of
11 mistake or accident there has to be some evidence put on by
12 the Defense that we are arguing accident.

13 THE COURT: And there's not -- yes, correct. You're
14 right about --

15 MR. VERNER: And I don't think we've gone there, Judge.
16 The *Martucci* case is the 2008 case which allowed prior
17 incidents of recurring child abuse, quote/unquote, so close
18 in time to the infliction of the fatal injury that the
19 evidence was relevant. They specifically distinguish the
20 *Pierce* case which was a same fact pattern case, but the
21 abuse was more than a year old. And the Supreme Court find
22 that more than year was not -- in the *Pierce* case was not
23 relevant to the fatality. In this case we're really looking
24 at three year -- no, more than a year. I was thinking of
25 today's date. But December 14th would be about a year and a

1 half prior.

2 MR. STUMBO: Judge, you know, we have read the *Pierce*
3 and *Martucci* cases. I think from our perspective those were
4 common scheme or plan cases, which is why we're not -- by my
5 recollection, which is why we're not offering under *Pierce*.
6 This is *Lyle* evidence of common scheme of plan, or plan
7 because of the time lapse. We do think *Pierce* would be on
8 point for that. Judge, we'll put it on the record we'll
9 respect Your Honor's ruling. If it's not admissible in our
10 case in chief under *Lyle*, in the alternative, Judge, we do
11 have a certified copy of the North Carolina conviction.
12 Certified copy of Buncombe County Clerk of Court. We could
13 offer that maybe as a less -- essentially corroborate
14 evidence early. It may be collateral, and I understand. It
15 may be a collateral matter that offering forensic evidence
16 would not be as appropriate.

17 MR. VERNER: My only problem with that is, prior
18 convictions are covered by a specific rule. The North
19 Carolina offense would basically be the equivalent of a
20 South Carolina traffic offense. It certainly would be an
21 offense that would not be a court of record conviction. It
22 would not be a crime of dishonesty, or in South Carolina to
23 admit prior convictions it has to be a crime carrying a
24 penalty of more than one year in prison. And it appears
25 that was a 60 day, which would be essentially in South

1 Carolina a Summary Court type case.

2 THE COURT: Well, honestly, gentlemen, I believe that
3 this is somewhat of a non-issue, because obviously the jury
4 has already heard from at least a couple of witnesses, and I
5 don't think that it's in dispute that this incident took
6 place. The door got opened earlier and that's been
7 discussed, or the fact that she was in this trouble with
8 Child Protective Services out of North Carolina has been
9 discussed, I think, also by her mother and by the
10 co-defendant. The fact that she went to court and entered a
11 plea to that misdemeanor offense up there has also been
12 discussed. We're dealing with something extremely remote
13 and the jury has been exceptionally patient. And even if
14 the Court were to conclude that it falls under a *Lyle*
15 exception, there's still the question of whether the
16 testimony that was proffered now substantially outweighs any
17 unfair prejudice. It looks to me, honestly, Solicitor, like
18 this testimony would be a little bit -- a little bit like
19 piling on, since the information is already out there and
20 it's not really in dispute. If it were being denied, or if
21 we were in a different posture, or it was being offered in
22 reply to her testimony, maybe I would be taking a different
23 tact. But for use in the State's case and chief at this
24 point in time -- and obviously if she were to deny -- or if
25 she were to take the stand and deny the incident then, yeah,

1 I think we'd be in a different category entirely. But where
2 we are now with it still being in the State's case in chief,
3 I'm not going to permit you to use it at this juncture.

4 MR. STUMBO: Okay. Thank you, Judge.

5 THE COURT: Very good.

6 MR. STUMBO: Thank you for hearing from us.

7 THE COURT: And the basis for that mostly is really
8 because it's already been alluded to.

9 MR. STUMBO: Becomes less probative because it's
10 already --

11 THE COURT: Exactly, precisely.

12 MR. STUMBO: Understood.

13 THE COURT: You put it so much more artfully. If we
14 could, I'll ask that Ms. McArdle be here, if she could, by
15 8:30 tomorrow morning. We'll resume in here at 9:00 with
16 motions for a directed verdict and I'll review with her her
17 Fifth Amendment rights at that point in time. And we'll see
18 how things progress. I will be asking my law clerk to email
19 to you guys, you gentlemen, this evening the instructions
20 that we've worked up thus far. And if you have the
21 opportunity to, kind of give me any feedback that you may
22 have concerning those at this point in time. They're still
23 in the rough draft stage, but it's along the lines of what
24 I've been thinking.

25 I'll see you all in the morning.

1 TRIAL DAY 5-04/08/16

2 THE COURT: Let's go back on the record, if we may. The
3 record, of course, should reflect that the Defendant is
4 present with counsel. At this point in time the State
5 rests, I assume, Solicitor?

6 MR. STUMBO: We do. Can we do that officially on the
7 record in front of the jury?

8 THE COURT: You can. You can do it -- we're going to
9 do it officially on the record now and then you can rest
10 again in front of the jury --

11 MR. STUMBO: Yes, correct.

12 THE COURT: -- when they come back in. Mr. Verner,
13 motions?

14 MR. VERNER: The State as defacto rested, just -- but
15 we'll do it formally in front of the jury?

16 THE COURT: Right. Well, I'm kind of considering this
17 the formal resting, and then the resting in front of the
18 jury will be window dressing.

19 MR. VERNER: Your Honor, does the Court have the
20 indictment in this case?

21 THE COURT: I did, and I imagine it is --

22 MR. VERNER: Does the Court have the indictment in this
23 case?

24 THE COURT: Mr. Verner.

25 MR. VERNER: I would move for a directed verdict on the

1 homicide by child abuse count, Your Honor. I would note, if
2 the Court has the indictment, the State has elected to
3 indict Theia for the killing of the child. She has not been
4 indicted as an aider and abetter and she was not indicted as
5 -- under the third prong which is the omission to perform.
6 The Courts have already looked at that. If she's not
7 indicted as an aider and abetter then the State is bound by
8 the allegations of the indictment is to prove that she
9 killed the child, maliciously killed the child during an act
10 of child abuse. The State -- one of the cases I'll be
11 referring to is *State vs. Smith* which is a 2013 case,
12 S.E.2nd -- 750 S.E.2nd 612. The indictment alleges that the
13 Defendant violated the statutory provision of homicide by
14 child abuse as a principal. Did not notice how -- homicide
15 by child abuse as aider and abetter, and thus Defendant
16 cannot be convicted of homicide by child abuse as aiding and
17 abetting as it is not a lesser included offense. It is one
18 of the elements of that crime. And there are other cases as
19 well that when I was really researching the lesser included
20 offenses portion of this case, Your Honor. In this case,
21 Your Honor, the State must prove that Theia McArdle killed
22 the child. If we just look at the medical testimony, that
23 the expert witness, the pathologist, and the Court knows
24 very well that Dr. Ross is an esteemed pathologist,
25 testified in her opinion the child died less than an hour

1 after the injury. Probably 30 minutes. That the injuries
2 were one -- there were no injuries that killed the child
3 other than the severe beating, which the doctor indicated
4 was one incident. Because of the injuries to the internal
5 organs the child would have stopped digesting food within 30
6 minutes, and the head wound the child, in her opinion, would
7 have been dead within an hour. It is undisputed that Theia
8 McArdle -- there's been no evidence at all that Theia
9 McArdle hit the child on the 29th in the head. The
10 co-defendant testified that she hit him on the 27th. He
11 said she hit him on the 28th. And then she said -- he said
12 that she -- he hit him in the morning of the 29th when the
13 child popped the cap gun. The co-defendant said that she
14 hit him in the stomach, and had been beating her earlier in
15 the day at the time the child was given dinner. That
16 there's been no testimony from any source, even the
17 co-defendant, that Theia was even there in the home. That
18 there are no other injuries to the child.

19 And the second problem for the State's case, Your
20 Honor, if the Court accepts the pathologist expert opinion,
21 the State has failed to prove that this happened in Newberry
22 County. It's undisputed that Theia didn't even leave
23 Spartanburg until after 11:41 p.m. We know that by the
24 phone records. Wouldn't have arrived in Newberry County --
25 Newberry until after the midnight hour. If you bootstrap

1 that on to Dr. Holaday, the emergency room physician's
2 testimony, that the child was dead for two hours, two hours
3 from 11:38 when the child was first brought into the
4 emergency room -- 1:35 technically to the hospital, 1:38
5 from the emergency room, the two hour window still leaves
6 the child, at the time the child died, in Spartanburg
7 County.

8 Your Honor, the Defense would ask for a directed
9 verdict on this count.

10 THE COURT: With regard to the second aspect of your
11 motion, the jurisdictional aspect or the venue aspect,
12 that's actually one of the first things that the Court
13 double checked. And --

14 MR. STUMBO: Judge, I believe it's 17-21-10.

15 THE COURT: Give that to me again. I've already -- I
16 looked that up Monday.

17 MR. STUMBO: 17-21-10 --

18 THE COURT: Yes. It's actually 20 -- 17-21-20. Venue
19 where person causes injury in one county and death occurs in
20 another. The language of this section has really not
21 changed since 1880, so it's a little bit anachronistic the
22 way it's written. But essentially that section provides
23 that jurisdiction or venue would lie in any county where if
24 someone is killed as a result of the beating, wounding,
25 poisoning or otherwise, if they're injured in one county and

1 yet they pass away in another county, the venue and
2 jurisdiction would lie in -- as I read it, pretty much any
3 county where --

4 MR. VERNER: I read that, Your Honor. But the venue --
5 if there was evidence that the child was still alive when he
6 was brought to Newberry, I would agree. But the pathologist
7 testified within 30 minutes after eating dinner. So no more
8 than an hour the child was dead. At the latest, that would
9 leave the child dead at 9:00 in Spartanburg County three
10 hours before they even brought the child to -- and what I
11 said about Dr. Holaday, the emergency room physician, he
12 said two hours. Two hours would still leave the child, he
13 said, dead before the child arrived at the hospital. Even
14 under his window the child is still dead before he even
15 comes -- before they even leave. According to the phone
16 records the last -- at 11:41 we know they're in Spartanburg
17 because it pings off the Spartanburg -- the home tower.
18 That is still within the doctor's -- and it's three and a
19 half hours or more within the pathologist's estimate of
20 death. So this is not a case where the baby was harmed in
21 one county and then died in Newberry County. Newberry
22 County emergency room says that child was dead on arrival,
23 and the doctor said that he thought two hours. The
24 pathologist said an hour after that baby ate dinner at the
25 latest.

1 THE COURT: I understand your position. In the light
2 most favorable to the State on that issue, the child was
3 pronounced dead in Newberry County. There has been some
4 evidence presented that the child was alive while the
5 Defendant was making the call here in Newberry. The
6 credibility of that we can address at a later point in time
7 when I deal with the first part, or I deal with other
8 aspects of your motion. So there is some evidence that
9 would indicate -- and again, the doctor pronounced the child
10 dead here in Newberry. So there is some evidence that would
11 indicate that the fatality took place, or the death took
12 place in Newberry County. So the second part I would --
13 respectfully I'll have to disagree with you on that in the
14 light most favorable to the State.

15 The first part, Solicitor, do you want to speak to
16 that? He's been indicted -- sorry. Ms. McArdle has been
17 indicted -- I'm just reading the indictment. "That she did
18 willfully and unlawfully cause the death of a child under
19 the age of 11, to wit, **Minor** while committing
20 child abuse or neglect as defined --" and then it gives the
21 code section citing subsection B for the definitional
22 aspects, "and the death under circumstances manifesting an
23 extreme indifference to human life in violation of
24 85(a)(1)." So --

25 MR. STUMBO: That's correct, Judge. And we would just

1 rely on the definition of child abuse or neglect. It says
2 it means, "Act or omission by any person which causes harm
3 to the child's physical health and -- or welfare." And then
4 subsection two it defines what harm is, Judge. I would
5 point you to both -- I think both subsections could be
6 applicable here under the facts of the case as have been
7 presented. There is evidence in the record of both. That
8 subsection A says, "The Defendant inflicts or allows to be
9 inflicted upon the child physical injury, including injuries
10 sustained as a result of excessive corporal punishment."
11 Subsection B, "Fails to supply the child with adequate food,
12 clothing, shelter or healthcare, and the failure to do so
13 causes a physical injury or condition resulting in death."
14 Judge, I think, based on what we've heard in this case
15 -- and, of course, we believe subsection (a)(1) is the most
16 applicable here because of that very language, "acts or
17 omissions." We think that even if the co-defendant, who
18 testified, inflicted blows that were fatal to this child,
19 even under that theory, in light most favorable to the State
20 the way the evidence as been presented, that Ms. McArdle is
21 an act or omission. I think there's plenty of evidence in
22 the record at this point of the abuse. And quite frankly,
23 both of them are together at the time they leave the house.
24 Even in Ms. McArdle's own statement to law enforcement,
25 which is in the record, she essentially says that Minor

1 was alive. She admits that **Minor** was alive when she gets
2 out of the car in Newberry and goes service the John. So
3 according to her though she had no idea he was sick
4 whatsoever, which obviously we believe it would be very
5 difficult for a reasonable jury to conclude that based on
6 his physical condition.

7 So, Judge, I think there are jury issues here.
8 Certainly Mr. Verner will be arguing, I'm sure, to the jury
9 that she was completely clueless to **Minor's** condition. I
10 think that based on, you know, the light most favorable to
11 the State reasonable inferences can be drawn by the jury.
12 Even in the absence of Mr. Bowman's testimony, for omitting
13 and failing to render healthcare and medical -- or try to
14 get some help for her own child who was dying right in front
15 of her in the car. Right in front of her in the house
16 before she left. I mean, with the phone records we think
17 it's pretty clear that they were there at the house at a
18 minimum 30 minutes, maybe even up to 45 if you look at the
19 timeframe and where her phone is pinging off the tower.
20 They're there at the house between about 11:00 and 11:45
21 before they leave for Newberry. And during that time
22 there's vomit in the house. There's vomit on his tee shirt,
23 Judge, which, of course, she denies. She tells law
24 enforcement in her interview that he's fine.

25 So, Judge, at the end of the day, you know, even if

1 this jury were to conclude best case scenario for Ms.
2 McArdle, that she didn't inflict any of these injuries on
3 the child and didn't punch him or didn't hit him, which are
4 multiple injuries, that, Judge, under the language of this
5 statute she can still be guilty of homicide by child abuse.
6 So, Judge, I think the language in the statute is plan as to
7 that apply the law to the facts of this case, in light most
8 favorable to the State. Judge, there's sufficient evidence.
9 And there again, I think Mr. Bowman's testimony obviously is
10 not circumstantial evidence here and it's a fact question
11 for the jury. If they were to believe his testimony, which
12 is in the record. They may believe none of his testimony.
13 They may believe bits and pieces. They may believe all of
14 it. And that's ultimately a question for the jury here,
15 Judge. And there again, if that evidence were to be
16 believed, they would also find Ms. McArdle guilty of
17 actually inflicting the acts themselves of -- beg the
18 Court's indulgence.

19 Judge, she admitted to law enforcement in her statement
20 as well, she said she called her mother and talked about how
21 -- and her mother testified to this, how Theia had called
22 her from the hospital and said that **Minor** had been
23 throwing up in Enoree and was sick there. And then now, you
24 know, he may not be revived. So there's plenty of evidence
25 even from her own mouth and her statements that show she had

1 knowledge that **Minor** was very sick and even dying at the
2 house and on the way to Newberry.

3 MR. VERNER: My only rebuttal, Your Honor, is that the
4 -- one, it sounds awfully a lot like the State is kind of
5 now vouching for the credibility of the co-defendant. But
6 even assuming they argue that he is believable to the jury,
7 that he did not testify that Theia struck the child after
8 dinner. His best testimony was she gave me permission to
9 strike the child after dinner, which would be aiding and
10 abetting liability. And my understanding -- but he did not
11 testify to any striking of her at any time other than that
12 morning when the child scared her out of bed and she said he
13 hit her in the stomach that morning, which the pathologist,
14 if you believe the pathologist, said the injuries occurred
15 within an hour of death. So that would be --

16 MR. STUMBO: Judge, just in response to that, that is
17 incorrect. On redirect Mr. Bowman -- Mr. Daniel confronted
18 him with the statements that he had made before about --
19 about the Defendant hitting the child after dinner. Not
20 only after dinner, but when he was put in the car to go to
21 Newberry that she struck him again. So that evidence is
22 there. He did say on redirect, yes, that is correct. So
23 there again, I think he --

24 THE COURT: Let me just get this straight then. So
25 we're in agreement that essentially the Court will not be

1 charging the aiding and abetting language. The Court will
2 simply charge Ms. McArdle's -- will charge the law as Ms.
3 McArdle as a principal as opposed to an aider and abetter.
4 So the Court won't be charging subsection (a)(2) of 85, and
5 the Court will provide the definition concerning fails to
6 supply the child with adequate food, clothing, shelter or
7 healthcare, and the failure to do so causes a physical
8 injury or condition resulting in death. So we're in
9 agreement with that, Mr. Verner, Mr. Stumbo?

10 MR. VERNER: If the Court is inclined to charge it,
11 yes, that the aiding and abetting. And just I will note on
12 the second part on the omission.

13 THE COURT: Yes, sir.

14 MR. VERNER: My reading of the statute is that omission
15 had to be a cause of the -- an omission --

16 THE COURT: Cause is cause.

17 MR. VERNER: -- which causes harm to the child. Now,
18 I'll recognize I've seen a case where failure to take a
19 child to the hospital can be such an omission, but there has
20 to be prove in the record that she knew the child was in a
21 dying condition.

22 THE COURT: Correct, there has to be actual knowledge.

23 MR. VERNER: Actual knowledge that the child was -- I
24 wouldn't go as far to say dying, but in a life-threatening
25 --

1 MR. STUMBO: Well, I think, Judge, based on her call to
2 her mother at the hospital, that would be evidence in the
3 record.

4 THE COURT: Perhaps.

5 MR. STUMBO: Judge, on the question, I think, *State vs.*
6 *Smith*, and Mr. Verner has already cited that case, as Ms.
7 McArdle is indicated, I believe *State vs. Smith* would
8 prohibit a charge of the aiding and abetting if she's not
9 indicated. So that's --

10 THE COURT: Right. I do agree. I do agree.

11 MR. VERNER: Secondly, Your Honor, the -- I take it
12 that the Court -- well --

13 THE COURT: The Court's going to -- the Court's going
14 to need to modify its instructions to eliminate the aiding
15 and abetting language that we simply included as a matter of
16 course because it was part of the standard charge in the
17 bench book. Secondly, the Court will need to add an actual
18 knowledge aspect and approximate cause charge to the
19 instructions.

20 MR. VERNER: Your Honor, I would ask for a lesser
21 included charge, should this case go to the jury, on
22 unlawful conduct towards the child. As I read unlawful
23 conduct I see no elements that would not be included under
24 the homicide by child abuse. Homicide by child abuse is
25 committing child abuse or neglect which is an act or

1 omission which causes harm to the child's physical health or
2 welfare, which is section 1, subsection (a)(1) of the
3 unlawful conduct, unreasonable risk of harm to the child's
4 life or safety. The causes -- unlawful conduct is "causes
5 to be done unlawfully or maliciously any bodily harm so that
6 the child's health or life is in danger or likely to be in
7 danger." And finally, homicide by child abuse. The third
8 element is "Abandons the child which results in death." The
9 unlawful conducts third element is "abandons the child" but
10 does not include the "which causes death." It tracks it
11 into three parts.

12 THE COURT: What is your theory on why there's evidence
13 in the record which would justify the lesser included?

14 MR. VERNER: There's, Your Honor, that she didn't take
15 the child to the hospital after the injuries. They frankly
16 got no evidence that child -- that she killed the child.

17 THE COURT: Correct.

18 MR. VERNER: Their best case is that she saw the
19 injuries. And I would assume that they've got this newly
20 established theory that she would rather go prostitute than
21 take the child to the hospital despite the evidence that
22 she, you know, would stand up to him. They had domestic
23 violence. But their -- it would have to be kind of a newly
24 created theory that she was aware the child had been beaten
25 to death or was dying, and then she decided that she would

1 rather make two prostitution calls than take the child to
2 the hospital. Which, of course, flies in the face of the
3 fact that she did take the child to the hospital when the
4 co-defendant said -- he told her about the injuries. This
5 case is very similar to the Palmer case where the
6 co-defendant -- there were injuries. The child was put to
7 bed. The co-defendant's -- or the Defendant's story was
8 that I could not have seen those injuries because the child
9 was sleeping. And that really tracks our defense in this
10 case, Your Honor.

11 THE COURT: All right. What I was getting at, the way
12 I'm reading the statutes, a homicide by child abuse applies
13 when you have actual death of the child.

14 MR. VERNER: Yes, sir. This is why this -- I'm saying
15 this would be a lesser --

16 THE COURT: Right. And I understand your argument that
17 it tracks. Honestly, Mr. Verner, I was somewhat surprised
18 that you were seeking a lesser included on this in light of
19 the way the case has been going.

20 MR. VERNER: Judge, I've got a guy doing 26 years where
21 we made a joint decision not to go for a lesser included
22 offense.

23 THE COURT: You're not going to make the same mistake
24 twice.

25 MR. VERNER: My understanding from my very case that

1 went on appeals on that was that that decision is in the
2 lawyer's judgment. I have discussed it with Theia and she
3 indicates she would not plead to that charge regardless. My
4 question as her lawyer is whether I think that there is
5 evidence in the record that could support that charge. And
6 if the State has the theory that she didn't take the child
7 to the hospital in time.

8 THE COURT: But that it was not proximate cause of her
9 death.

10 MR. VERNER: But it was not proximate cause of the
11 death. And I think under the facts of this case, if the
12 State argues that that is what the -- if the State -- if the
13 State argues to the jury that she should have taken the
14 child to the hospital, and the jury found that that would
15 have been reasonable but that she might not have known that
16 the child was dying, it could be unlawful --

17 THE COURT: Well, one thing that just occurred to me.
18 We do have two separate injuries. The injury to the abdomen
19 the doctor testified would have resulted in death within --

20 MR. VERNER: Two days.

21 THE COURT: -- maybe a day or 48 hours, right. 48
22 hours at the outset. The fatal blow that was the immediate
23 approximate cause of the child's passing on the 30th was, of
24 course, the blow to the head. It's entirely possible that
25 she may have been privy to the abdominal injury and the

1 injury to the groin and that the -- as you correctly point
2 out, Mr. Verner, and that the evidence indicates that the
3 blow to the head took place at a later point in time when
4 your client wasn't even present and would not have been
5 privy to it. So we're getting a little beyond what I was
6 going to address as far as motions. But we may as well keep
7 talking about it.

8 Does the State have any firm position on the unlawful
9 conduct lesser?

10 MR. STUMBO: Judge, the concern I have, and we've had
11 cases recently with the Supreme Court -- in fact, we got
12 kind of mixed messages from them. And in one case -- I
13 don't have this one in front of me --

14 THE COURT: You're being generous by saying we've
15 gotten mixed messages.

16 MR. STUMBO: Yes. We've been chastised for asking for
17 lesser included offenses, I guess to try to hedge all bets,
18 for lack of a better term. But recently a case that Mr.
19 Verner and I tried right here in Newberry was reversed by
20 the Court of Appeals, even though neither one of us was
21 really arguing the theory, and it's going to the Supreme
22 Court now. I don't know what they'll do with it. But they
23 reversed the case for the judge failing to charge voluntary
24 manslaughter on a murder case.

25 THE COURT: That's the Manny Smith thing you were

1 talking about?

2 MR. STUMBO: It is. It had been repudiated by Ms.
3 Smith during the trial. And really Mr. Verner's theory and
4 my theories in closing were not in any way, shape or form
5 consistent with a voluntary, because the Defendant had
6 repudiated on the stand that there had been some kind of
7 deep passion. So all that to say, Judge, I'm very skittish
8 in how it comes to asking for lesser included because I
9 don't want to be, you know, smacked around by the Supreme
10 Court for trying to hedge our bets. But by the same token,
11 if something's not charged, maybe later they'd say, well,
12 we're going to reverse it because it should have been. I
13 really don't know, Judge.

14 One case -- I would say the Palmer case. I was reading
15 that one as Mr. Verner was addressing Your Honor. Both
16 defendants were convicted in the Palmer case of homicide by
17 child abuse, aiding and abetting homicide by child abuse.

18 THE COURT: Is this the one that took place in the
19 hotel in Myrtle Beach?

20 MR. STUMBO: Correct.

21 THE COURT: Okay, I know the case.

22 MR. STUMBO: And unlawful conduct towards the child.
23 So apparently in that case -- and I want to say Ms. Lively,
24 who's running for Solicitor down in Lexington right now,
25 tried this when she was working with the Solicitor over in

1 Horry County. And she discussed this with me at one point
2 in the past. But the fact that they indicated for all three
3 offenses and the Defendants were convicted of all three
4 offenses tells me if there was -- if it was truly a lesser
5 included offense then there'd be a double jeopardy issue.
6 And I don't think you can be convicted for the primary
7 offense and a lesser. Particularly under the Blockburger
8 test it would appear to me that unlawful conduct towards a
9 child was not a lesser included. So I'm just arguing that
10 in the Palmer case, under the theory I'm looking at here, in
11 applying the Blockburger test to it, and the elements being
12 different -- in other words, there's a -- there's an element
13 in the lesser -- because the element is a person who has
14 charge or custody of the child. That element in the lesser
15 offense is not present in the homicide by child abuse. So I
16 think under the Blockburger test, Judge, it's not a lesser
17 included. So -- because the homicide by child abuse statute
18 does not require the element of the Defendant being a
19 custodial caretaker of the child. So I just -- looking at
20 the strict language there. And the fact that I would think
21 that the Supreme Court would have addressed the issue, or at
22 least it would have been raised about that being double
23 jeopardy for the defendants to be convicted of both -- on
24 both indictments for the same operative set of facts.

25 THE COURT: I do understand your position and I've

1 followed this line of cases that deal with homicide by child
2 abuse, and again the Supreme Court is still refining, I
3 think, the law in this particular area, especially when it
4 comes to the issue of accomplice liability and liability of a
5 principal. If you were to engage Rauch Wise in this
6 discussion he'll explain to you in detail, in great detail,
7 if he has not already, the peculiar aspect of unlawful
8 conduct towards a child involving a parent, guardian,
9 employee, caregiver of a daycare, et cetera, or an adult who
10 stands in the role of in loco parentis. That's included in
11 the unlawful conduct statute. But the homicide by child
12 abuse statute is much more broad and cast a net much, much,
13 much wider. It doesn't include that language. You're
14 correct to point that out. Under the peculiar facts of this
15 case, however, in light of the different injuries, I'm going
16 to go ahead and charge that, the unlawful conduct, because
17 there is evidence that's been produced over the last day or
18 two that would warrant, in my opinion, that charge. If I'm
19 not -- if I'm mistaken and those elements simply are not
20 present, then the jury is very intelligent, they've been
21 very engaged and they can flush that out.

22 I'm assuming, Mr. Verner, you're also raising -- or
23 you're also making a motion for a directed verdict based
24 upon the lack of any direct or circumstantial or substantial
25 circumstantial evidence from which a jury could reasonably

1 conclude that the Defendant is guilty. Is that correct as
2 well?

3 MR. VERNER: Yes, sir. I thought that -- the directed
4 verdict was on the whole statute for that reason. But then
5 as the Court -- and I thought that was my first motion. And
6 then I kind of went to the aiding and abetting portion of
7 it. But yes, sir. It's the -- the Court's correct.

8 THE COURT: The Court -- I will say for the record that
9 the Court does have some serious concerns over some of the
10 testimony that which has been presented in this case,
11 specifically the testimony of Mr. Bowman. I have not made
12 those concerns public yet, but I have voiced those privately
13 in chambers to the attorneys. There are serious, serious,
14 serious concerns with his credibility. If you look at the
15 Hepburn case it almost invites the Court, because the
16 Supreme Court in Hepburn, I think it's on page 24, basically
17 states to the effect that because the Supreme Court is not
18 in the position to judge credibility we're just going to
19 throw our hands up. And clearly the jury in Hepburn did not
20 believe the defendant in that case, and because the Supreme
21 Court is not in a position to judge credibility, they're not
22 going to take into account the failure of the jury to
23 believe Ms. Hepburn's version of events. The Supreme Court
24 finds that troubling. I'm going to help them out if need
25 be, because the court, in this particular case, had an

1 opportunity to review the cross and the direct of Mr.
2 Bowman, and if this court had that power, as a matter of law
3 the court would conclude that his testimony, with the
4 exception of when he gave his name, and even then I probably
5 should have asked for identification, as a matter of law the
6 court had the power to do so, the court would find his
7 testimony incredible. He was impeached numerous times. His
8 versions of events don't line up in any way, shape or form.
9 But as the Supreme Court has often reminded this Court, the
10 obligation of judging credibility falls to the jury and not
11 to the Court. Then it becomes the question of under Rule 19
12 of the criminal rules whether there's a failure of any
13 competent evidence, whether there's any evidence which
14 reasonably tends to prove the guilt of the accused. But
15 there is obviously, if the Court were to discount Mr.
16 Bowman's testimony, there is no direct evidence of the
17 Defendant's guilt in this particular case. And as Cherry
18 points out, *State vs. Cherry*, the Court should grant a
19 directed verdict when the evidence merely raises a suspicion
20 that the accused is guilty. We now have the substantial
21 circumstantial evidence that's standard at this particular
22 stage. And, of course, the case that came out two weeks
23 ago, the name of which escapes me, reiterates that the court
24 is not supposed to weigh the evidence, but the court still
25 has an obligation to determine whether there is substantial

1 circumstantial evidence. I don't know how to find out if
2 something is substantial other than to weigh it. I don't
3 know what the court means by that. And the court then says
4 that this is an evolving area of jurisprudence and
5 distinguishes some other cases that you would have thought
6 would have been on all fours. And again, this is just a
7 case that came out two weeks ago.

8 The Court is going to send this to the jury. The Court
9 will conclude that there is circumstantial evidence from
10 which the jury could reasonably infer the Defendant is
11 guilty of one or both charges. Perhaps they would believe
12 Mr. Bowman. Perhaps all 12 of these individuals will
13 believe what the Court believes to be Mr. Bowman's
14 incredible testimony, unbelievable testimony. Maybe all 12
15 of them will buy it. I don't know. But at the very least
16 the Court would find, for purposes of the record, that there
17 is circumstantial evidence sufficient -- substantially
18 sufficient in this case to send to the jury on these
19 different charges. And so, for that reason, your motion is
20 denied.

21 MR. STUMBO: Judge, briefly, just to address -- and I
22 understand the Court's feeling about Mr. Bowman. But one
23 thing that was consistent that never changed in his
24 testimony from the time he talked to officers the day after
25 this happened was that he spanked the child in the tub and

1 he fell down and hit his head. That's about the only
2 consistent thing I've heard the entire case from Mr. Bowman
3 or Ms. McArdle. I just want to point that out to the Court.

4 Your jury charge, Judge, you will say, "You may believe
5 part of the testimony of a witness and reject the remaining
6 part of the testimony of that same witness. You may believe
7 the testimony of a witness in its entirety or reject the
8 testimony of a witness in it's entirety." So, Judge, I just
9 want to make clear for the record that the State's position
10 from the beginning of this case has never been that Richard
11 Bowman has at any point come in and given the full story of
12 what happened. The bottom line is though, under the Hepburn
13 case, quite frankly, if he comes forward and gives some
14 version of the events that some of which match the evidence,
15 which I think here his consistent testimony from the
16 beginning that he spanked the child and he hit his head on
17 the tub, that's never really changed, Judge. He said that
18 in the beginning. He came in and didn't hedge on that this
19 week. And quite frankly, he hung himself, Judge. He came
20 here -- there's nothing in his testimony, quite frankly,
21 that would lead me to believe that he's not guilty of
22 homicide by child abuse, too.

23 THE COURT: He admitted as much on the stand.

24 MR. STUMBO: So he said that. So I guess what I'm
25 saying, Judge, is I understand your position on the

1 credibility of Mr. Bowman. But just for the record for
2 future purposes, I do think there's things that the jury can
3 look at in his testimony and try to put the pieces of the
4 puzzle together, which is what they do. I don't think
5 there's any case I've ever tried where there hadn't been the
6 truth somewhere in the middle of a bunch of stuff, and
7 that's what, you know, the jury has a very difficult job of
8 having to ascertain what the facts are and how it plays out.
9 But just so the Court knows that it's the position of the
10 State that both of these Defendants are guilty of homicide
11 by child abuse.

12 THE COURT: I do -- I fully understand your position,
13 Solicitor, and please do not take my comments as a criticism
14 of the manner in which this case has been investigated or
15 prepared for trial. I'm well aware that the State has to
16 play the cards that are dealt them, and with the current
17 case law dealing with joint trials in cases of this nature,
18 essentially the edict from the Supreme Court has been severe
19 the trials, try the defendants separately. You had Hepburn
20 in there. You add Bruton in there. You add Crawford in
21 there. And invariably you have to, or the State has to find
22 someone to testify in these -- in these situations where
23 there's two individuals equally suspicious. The State has
24 to find someone, make a deal with someone, or otherwise
25 elicit testimony from one of those two individuals, and

1 that's where you are. Fifteen years ago both individuals
2 would be on trial and the jury would sort it out as the
3 finders of fact. And for the entire time that South
4 Carolina jurisprudence has existed, being the finders of
5 fact, that made it their responsibility. It wasn't the
6 responsibility of the State to try and figure out in these
7 situations where both people could equally be culpable. It
8 wasn't the job of the State to figure that out. It was the
9 job of the jury, and for whatever reason we have now moved
10 away from that. I am not in a position to take issue with
11 the -- obviously with the jurisprudence on that particular
12 question.

13 My point concerning Mr. Bowman though, Solicitor, is
14 I'm quite certain having tried cases, many, many cases
15 yourself, you've had witnesses that were more substantial
16 more credible than Mr. Bowman testify, and this Court has --
17 and I'm minimizing. This Court has had the opportunity to
18 hear testimony from substantially more credible witnesses as
19 well. So while I am slamming Mr. Bowman, I do appreciate
20 your point that he has at least been consistent in that
21 regard. So I guess that's two things. His name and the
22 slapping of the tub thing that he has perhaps been
23 consistent of all this time.

24 Mr. Verner, I anticipate that you want to call the
25 doctor who is coming from Charleston who was supposed to be

1 here about 25 minutes ago. Do I need to review with your
2 client -- I imagine that you've already reviewed with your
3 client extensively her right to testify. Would you like for
4 me to go over that with her, or do you feel that's
5 necessary?

6 MR. VERNER: I told her, Judge, that you would admonish
7 her. Quite frankly, I haven't made that -- she hasn't made
8 the final decision yet.

9 THE COURT: Certainly.

10 MR. VERNER: But traditionally I would ask the Court to
11 admonish her on her rights. Not to admonish her, but just
12 advise her or restate the rights. I'm not rearguing -- I'm
13 just arguing in Hepburn, Your Honor, but the fact that the
14 -- and I appreciate the Court's recitation. But that the
15 co-defendant was an interested, that the fact that he was a
16 co-defendant, and that was the only testimony -- direct
17 testimony --

18 THE COURT: That concerns --

19 MR. VERNER: -- was important to the court -- the
20 Appellate Court in Hepburn was not just that he was
21 incredible, but also he had the interest -- his own penal
22 interest. But I would offer Ms. McArdle to the Court, Your
23 Honor, if the Court's ready to do that now.

24 THE COURT: Sure.

25 MR. VERNER: And I think my pathologist indicated to me

1 that she would be here about 10:00. She's coming from
2 Charleston.

3 THE COURT: That won't be a problem.

4 MR. VERNER: Step up here.

5 THE COURT: She can stay where she is if she wants to.

6 MR. VERNER: Stand up, please.

7 THE COURT: You are Theia McArdle. Is that correct,
8 ma'am?

9 THE DEFENDANT: Yes, sir.

10 THE COURT: I need just to put you under oath just for
11 purposes of making sure that you understand what I'm saying
12 to you and that you give me truthful answers. Okay?

13 THEIA McARDLE, having first been
14 duly sworn, testified as follows:

15 THE COURT: Again, you are Theia McArdle, correct?

16 THE DEFENDANT: Yes.

17 THE COURT: Ms. McArdle, we've reached that point in
18 the trial where the State has rested and you have an
19 opportunity to present a defense in this case. Mr. Verner
20 has indicated to me that you do anticipate calling the
21 doctor from Charleston. And understand, Ms. McArdle, that
22 you also have the right to testify if you choose to do so.
23 Do you understand that, ma'am?

24 THE DEFENDANT: Yes.

25 THE COURT: At the same time, ma'am, you have the right

1 to claim the protections guaranteed to you under the Fifth
2 Amendment to the United States Constitution as well as the
3 similar amendment under the South Carolina Constitution.
4 That amendment basically says, or that provision of law
5 basically says, that no person can be compelled to be a
6 witness against themselves in any trial where that person is
7 a Defendant. Do you understand that, ma'am?

8 THE DEFENDANT: Yes.

9 THE COURT: Now, Ms. McArdle, this is a personal right.
10 It belongs to you. And what this right means is that no one
11 can force you to testify in this particular case. Obviously
12 the Solicitor cannot, I cannot, not even Mr. Verner can. Do
13 you understand that?

14 THE DEFENDANT: Yes, sir.

15 THE COURT: And if you choose to testify, you
16 understand, Ms. McArdle, you'll be subject by cross-
17 examination by the Solicitor. You'll have to answer any
18 questions that are put to you. And if you have any
19 convictions for crimes that carry more than a year or for
20 crimes involving dishonesty the Court may determine that the
21 Solicitor can cross-examine you on those particular
22 offenses. Do you understand that, ma'am?

23 THE DEFENDANT: Yes, sir.

24 THE COURT: Ms. McArdle, if you decide not to testify,
25 then I will instruct the jury they're not to hold that

1 against you, they're not to consider it, they're not even to
2 talk about it in the jury room. That you have the right not
3 to testify and no inference of guilt should arise from your
4 exercise of that right. Do you understand that?

5 THE DEFENDANT: Yes, sir.

6 THE COURT: But if you chose to testify, Ms. McArdle,
7 you understand that this choice will have to be made by you.
8 It's a personal choice and it will have to be made knowing
9 the protections that are given to you under the Fifth
10 Amendment to the U.S. Constitution. Do you understand that?

11 THE DEFENDANT: Yes, sir.

12 THE COURT: Now, you can talk to whoever you want to
13 about this decision, friends, you can talk to family
14 members. Truthfully, I would suggest you talk to Mr. Verner
15 more than anyone else about this because he has expertise in
16 this particular area. Ultimately though whatever decision
17 you make has to be yours and yours alone as to whether you
18 testify. Do you understand that?

19 THE DEFENDANT: Yes, sir.

20 THE COURT: Have you understood all the rights that
21 I've gone over with you with regard to the Fifth Amendment?

22 THE DEFENDANT: Yes, sir.

23 THE COURT: And is there anything that you need to ask
24 me about that?

25 THE DEFENDANT: No, sir.

1 THE COURT: The way I usually leave it, Ms. McArdle, is
2 if you choose to testify and Mr. Verner calls you to the
3 stand, I'll simply assume that you've automatically waived
4 your right under the Fifth Amendment. Is that okay?

5 THE DEFENDANT: Yes, sir.

6 THE COURT: Is it all right to handle it that way, Mr.
7 Verner?

8 MR. VERNER: I think that's the perfect way, Your
9 Honor.

10 THE COURT: Good enough. I think we've covered all the
11 basis as far as motions are concerned. The jury is probably
12 on its way in, and you can check to see if your doctor from
13 Charleston is coming.

14 MR. VERNER: Thank you.

15 THE COURT: Very good. We'll be at ease for a few
16 moments.

17 (Whereupon, a recess was held from 10:00 a.m. to 10:19
18 a.m.)

19 MR. STUMBO: Judge, can I address something briefly?

20 THE COURT: Go right ahead. Yes, sir, please.

21 MR. STUMBO: Before we bring the jury in. Just after
22 reading the Palmer case again and the Smith case over the
23 break, I just wanted to put on the record I am very
24 concerned about the lesser included charge. Well, I say
25 lesser included, because Smith is very clear that unlawful

1 conduct is not a lesser included. I don't know that that's
2 not going to create major appellate issues, and I just -- I
3 think under the -- just strictly under the Blockburger test
4 this -- the scenario, Judge, if the jury were to return a
5 verdict of guilty on unlawful conduct, I don't know how that
6 survives appeal in -- that case was never presented to the
7 Grand Jury and it's not a lesser included offense, if that
8 makes sense. I don't know if there's --

9 MR. VERNER: I think the Solicitor is right.

10 MR. STUMBO: -- jurisdiction here. I guess that's just
11 -- Judge, I --

12 MR. VERNER: It would have to be a lesser included
13 offense.

14 MR. STUMBO: I want to be -- I'd rather be safe than
15 sorry on that, you know. And there again, I don't want to
16 make it look like I'm fighting one way or the other. I just
17 think under the law with it being clearly under the Smith
18 case and the under the Palmer case not a lesser included,
19 and I think if you apply Blockburger that's accurate. The
20 fact -- you know, certainly as the Solicitor we could have
21 indicted unlawful conduct and called that this week, too,
22 but we chose not to. And we stand by that decision not
23 choosing to do that, and we'll just see what -- you know,
24 see what the jury does. But I just wanted to bring that up
25 to the Court. I know we're not charging yet. We still have

1 the defense. But I wanted to address that. I think that
2 maybe -- before I didn't strongly indicate enough, and after
3 I've read the cases I think it's just legally I don't know
4 that we can charge that at this point.

5 THE COURT: I'm looking at Smith now. I haven't
6 reviewed Palmer again because I thought I was sufficiently
7 familiar with it. I don't see where Smith says that
8 unlawful conduct isn't a lesser included. Is that in
9 Palmer?

10 MR. STUMBO: It's in Smith, Judge. I was looking at a
11 head note, but I can find the exact place in Smith.

12 MR. VERNER: And just factually I don't know if Palmer,
13 Your Honor, included like a -- I thought Palmer was more
14 like a series of abuse. But I would agree with the
15 Solicitor. If it's not a lesser included offense, the jury
16 cannot consider it. But we would argue that it is a lesser
17 included offense.

18 MR. DANIEL: And, Your Honor, in Palmer, Palmer was
19 convicted of both, unlawful conduct and homicide by child
20 abuse. So clearly that would not be a lesser included by
21 that very fact alone.

22 MR. VERNER: Well, just -- he's correct if it was the
23 same actions. Off the top of my head, I don't know if that
24 was a course of conduct where they were saying it was a
25 separate incidence or if it was the same. But I agree with

1 both Solicitors on that, if they're facts are right.

2 MR. STUMBO: There again, I think we can probably
3 discuss it further, Judge. I know we're not charging yet.
4 But I have the Smith case out and I'll find it in here.

5 THE COURT: I'll review Palmer while we work with the
6 jury. I'll bring the jury out. Solicitor, you rest. We'll
7 go straight to your case. And for the record, Mr. Verner,
8 you also renew all previous objections, all previous
9 motions, correct?

10 MR. VERNER: I do, Your Honor. And I would ask after
11 -- I do think know, just for the Court's knowledge, we're
12 probably going to put the Defendant on. I would just ask
13 for maybe a five minute break between doctor -- the
14 pathologist. I would guarantee the Court I will have very
15 short directed questions. The length of her testimony will
16 be entirely, you know, up to the Solicitor. But both would
17 be relatively short witnesses. I would just ask for just a
18 quick break in between.

19 THE COURT: I'll be more than happy to give that to
20 you.

21 MR. VERNER: And that way I can pretty much assure the
22 Court that we can give it to the jury by lunch.

23 THE COURT: Very good. Let's have the jury, please.

24 And, of course, same ruling on all prior motions by the
25 Court.

DR. ELLEN RIEMER: DIRECT EXAMINATION

935

1 (Whereupon, the jury entered the courtroom at 10:28
2 a.m.)

3 THE COURT: The record should reflect the jury is back
4 and seated. Ladies and gentlemen of the jury, thank you for
5 your continued patience. We were here at 9:00. We started
6 work here at 9:00, and it's about an hour and a half, even
7 though we took a brief break for ourselves. So thank you
8 for your continued patience and your continued attention.
9 I've talked to the attorneys and we still would hope of the
10 Court that this case will be submitted to you sometime prior
11 to lunchtime today. Okay?

12 With that, Solicitor, you're recognized, sir.

13 MR. STUMBO: Thank you, Your Honor. At this time the
14 State rests its case.

15 THE COURT: Very good. Mr. Verner, your case, sir.

16 MR. VERNER: Your Honor, I raise the motions the Court
17 addressed.

18 THE COURT: All motions renewed, all issues renewed.
19 Same ruling as before.

20 MR. VERNER: Your Honor, I would call Dr. Ellen Riemer.

21 DR. ELLEN RIEMER, having been first
22 duly sworn, testified as follows:

23 DIRECT EXAMINATION

24 BY MR. VERNER:

25 Q Doctor, you're a little bit soft spoken, so I'm going

1 to ask you to kind of turn that microphone or just speak up
2 a little bit more.

3 A Okay.

4 Q And I'm going to ask you questions from over here to
5 make sure that people who need to hear you can hear you.

6 Okay? Where are you employed, Dr. Riemer?

7 A I'm employed at the Medical University of South
8 Carolina.

9 Q In what city?

10 A In Charleston, South Carolina.

11 Q And you drove up from Charleston this morning?

12 A Yes.

13 Q What is your occupation?

14 A I'm a forensic pathology, which is a licensed medical
15 doctor with speciality and certification in forensic
16 pathology.

17 Q Now, the medical university, are you a professor? A
18 teaching professor at the University?

19 A Yes. I have a title as Associate Professor of
20 Pathology and Laboratory Medicine.

21 Q Do you also practice as a pathologist?

22 A Yes. It's an academic institution. So I'm practicing
23 pathology medicine and also have responsibilities as an
24 academic -- academician, teaching medical students who go to
25 the university.

1 Q Do you perform autopsies --

2 A Yes.

3 Q -- as part of your practice at MUSC?

4 A Yes. That goes with my job.

5 Q May I ask you where you went -- what was your

6 undergraduate college?

7 A I went to Bryn Mawr College, which is a small liberal
8 arts school in Pennsylvania, and I graduated from there in
9 1985.

10 Q And then where did you go to medical school?

11 A Well, actually I didn't go directly to medical school.
12 You want to hear what I did in between?

13 Q Just where you went to --

14 A I went to medical school at Tel Aviv University in
15 Israel.

16 Q And when did you get your medical degree?

17 A 1997.

18 Q Are you board certified as a pathologist?

19 A Yes.

20 Q And you've got -- obviously you've got your medical
21 license?

22 A Yes.

23 Q Do you have any other certifications or licenses?

24 A Yeah. I'm board certified in anatomic pathology, which
25 is the basic pathology before a subspeciality in forensic

1 pathology. And I'm licensed to practice medicine in
2 addition to South Carolina, also in North Carolina and New
3 York.

4 Q Are you published?

5 A Yes. I published many articles. I'm the co-author on
6 approximately 23 articles on -- in pathology.

7 MR. VERNER: Your Honor, I would offer Dr. Ellen Riemer
8 as an expert witness in the area of forensic pathology.

9 THE COURT: Any objection?

10 MR. STUMBO: I do have just a few voir dire questions.

11 THE COURT: Go ahead.

12 VOIR DIRE EXAMINATION

13 BY MR. STUMBO:

14 Q Good morning, Dr. Riemer. I'm David Stumbo.

15 A Hi.

16 Q I believe we've met before today. I hope you had a
17 nice trip up from Charleston. I believe you said you've
18 been published about 23 times. Is your primary practice
19 area doing autopsies or --

20 A Yes.

21 Q -- mainly doing research?

22 A Yes. My primary practice area is doing autopsies.

23 Q About how many have you done in your career?

24 A In my career, approximately 4,700.

25 Q And so, you've been qualified as an expert before?

DR. ELLEN RIEMER: DIRECT EXAMINATION

939

1 A Many times.

2 Q In South Carolina?

3 A Yes.

4 MR. STUMBO: No further questions. No objection.

5 THE COURT: Very good. Ladies and gentlemen, as I
6 explained yesterday with the other forensic pathologist, in
7 this case the parties agree that Dr. Riemer is an expert in
8 the field of forensic pathology, so she can give opinion
9 testimony. She's not limited to testimony about things that
10 she saw or observed. Of course, that is evidence that you
11 may use as you deem appropriate. She can also, of course,
12 state her reasons for her opinions.

13 Mr. Verner, you may continue, sir.

14 MR. VERNER: Thank you, Your Honor.

15 Q Now, Dr. Riemer, I would assume that there are fewer
16 pathologists -- there aren't a whole lot of them running
17 around the state, are there?

18 A Well, I don't know -- I don't know the exact number.
19 There are five forensic pathologists at the Medical
20 University of South Carolina in Charleston, but I don't know
21 who's practicing elsewhere.

22 Q I guess I should have -- are you familiar with Dr.
23 Ross? Janice Ross?

24 A I've heard of her, but I don't know her personally.

25 Q I sent you the medical records from the autopsy. Well,

1 the medical records for the child Minor in this
2 case, haven't I?

3 A Yes.

4 Q Have you had time to review the medical files in this
5 case?

6 A Yes.

7 Q Now, you did not participate in the actual autopsy
8 itself of the child, did you?

9 A That's correct.

10 Q Your investigation, or your review of the case is
11 solely limited to reviewing the medical records and the
12 autopsy records?

13 A Yes.

14 Q Did that include the photographs that the pathologist
15 in the -- that were included in the medical file of the
16 child's body?

17 A Yes.

18 Q Did that include the autopsy photographs of the child's
19 internal injuries?

20 A Yes.

21 Q Do you think that you've had sufficient medical records
22 and photographs and other materials where you can make an
23 opinion in this case as to cause of death issues and injury
24 to the child?

25 A Yes.

DR. ELLEN RIEMER: DIRECT EXAMINATION

941

1 Q Now, you are aware that the child was declared dead at
2 2:06 a.m. on December 30th?

3 A Yes.

4 Q And that was 2014?

5 A Yes.

6 Q What were your findings as to **Minor's** cause
7 of death?

8 A In my opinion, the cause of death is blunt force
9 injuries to the head.

10 Q Now, the -- well, tell me just briefly -- and we've had
11 benefit of Dr. Ross --

12 A Yes.

13 Q -- but just tell us just briefly --

14 A Yes.

15 Q -- how the blunt force injuries caused the child's
16 death.

17 A The blunt force injuries to the head, which are
18 basically impacts to the head, caused bleeding around the
19 brain and on the surface of the brain, which causes -- the
20 head is a fixed space. You know, it can't like expand when
21 there's bleeding inside the brain because it's a bony
22 structure. So with accumulation of blood around the brain
23 between the brain and the skull there's basically no place
24 for the brain that's kind of compressed, and that compresses
25 the respiratory centers of the brain and the brain stops

1 working and the patient stops breathing. So the impacts to
2 the head cause bleeding in the brain, and as a result of
3 that, death to the child.

4 Q And when you say blunt force trauma, what are you
5 talking about? The term blunt.

6 A Yes. Well, in forensic pathology when we describe
7 injuries we frequently make distinctions between blunt force
8 and sharp force objects. So if -- and then there are some
9 penetrating injuries, such as like a blow would be a
10 penetrating injury. A sharp force object would be like an
11 ax or knife. And in this case there wasn't any disruption
12 like through the skin, as if like from a knife or, you know,
13 anything sharp. So it's clear -- and it wasn't a
14 penetrating injury by bullet. It's from blunt force. So
15 impact from an object. And though we can't tell what the
16 object is, but it's some kind of a blunt object without a
17 sharp edge.

18 Q Did the blunt -- there was bruising throughout the
19 child's body. Is that fair to say?

20 A Yes.

21 Q In your opinion, where was the substantial bruising?

22 A Well, there was bruising in multiple occasions. But
23 the bruising on the head that caused bleeding to the brain
24 is the significant impact that caused the death of this
25 child.

1 Q Now, did you examine the shapes of the bruises and
2 patterns of the bruises?

3 A There were no pattern. So that was -- a feature of
4 these bruises is that they didn't have a specific pattern to
5 them. So sometimes we're able to look at bruises and impact
6 sites on the body and tell that it was a specific object.
7 For instance, if somebody was struck with a tennis racket
8 that had like the netting, you would -- you might be able to
9 see a pattern of that netting on the skin because that would
10 create a pattern of a bruise that would resemble the tennis
11 racket. And also if there was a belt then we might see
12 edges of a belt. It would have a shape. These were very
13 amorphous. They didn't have a any specific shape to tell us
14 what object it was that caused the injury.

15 Q Would that be consistent with my fist, or a fist
16 rather?

17 A Yes. A fist would leave that kind of amorphous bruise.

18 Q Now, is it sometimes -- are hard slaps sometimes
19 recognizable as opposed to the patternless injuries?

20 A They may be. If there's specific finger marks it could
21 look like that.

22 Q So slapping the child is possible that you might see
23 kind of bruises that appear to be kind of in a finger shape
24 or --

25 A Yes, that's possible. You don't necessarily get that.

1 Depending on how the hand hits the -- just like we might
2 have with the tennis racket. If there's significant impact
3 with fingers we might see outline of fingers on the body.

4 Q Did you see any injuries that appear to be slap marks
5 on this child?

6 A Yes. In the flank region it looked like there were.

7 MR. VERNER: Is Mr. Bentley behind the TV?

8 THE COURT: He is.

9 MR. VERNER: Mr. Bentley, No. 90, please. You can step
10 down, Doctor, if that would help you see this photograph I'm
11 going to publish.

12 (Whereupon, the witness stepped down from the witness
13 stand.)

14 Q What are we looking at in this photograph, Doctor?

15 A Yes.

16 Q And you don't have a microphone, so just --

17 A That's fine. So we can't be 100 percent sure. But you
18 can see that there's sort of elongated structures that you
19 can imagine being a hand and fingertips either once or a
20 couple of times in that location. So, you know, we don't
21 get -- it's like you can lift fingerprints off, or it
22 doesn't necessarily look like an exact hand. But that kind
23 of elongated pattern is -- would be consistent with being
24 slapped firmly by a hand.

25 Q Could it also be consistent with grabbing somebody and

1 squeezing them?

2 A Yes. Anything that's going to, you know, cause
3 bruising from fingers.

4 Q But that is consistent but not to a medical degree of
5 -- you wouldn't say that's conclusively --

6 A Yeah. I think it's very compelling but not conclusive.

7 MR. VERNER: Thank you, Doctor. I'm sorry. You may
8 sit down. Thank you, Mr. Bentley.

9 (Whereupon, the witness returned to the witness stand.)

10 Q How many injuries -- and I'm going to talk about
11 **Minor's** injuries to his head and then to his body
12 separately, if I can. Dr. Ross testified that in her
13 opinion the bruises throughout the child's body appeared to
14 be consistent in time. Have you made a finding on --

15 A I did agree with that.

16 Q So obviously all the hits can't occur at the exact same
17 time, but they would be of the same general --

18 A Yes.

19 Q And you were confer -- what is the doctor, the
20 pathologist, who actually performs the -- is it prosector?

21 A Prosector is a word for meaning the person that does
22 the dissection. Which when I do autopsies I'm the prosector
23 and the pathologist. So the doctor and the prosector. The
24 prosector just means like the person who's examining the
25 body. But it --

1 Q It's not necessarily always the pathologist?

2 A That's right. The pathologist might have an assistant.

3 Q But you would agree to a reasonable degree of medical
4 certainty that the bruises are the same general time and --

5 A Yes. Of the same age.

6 Q How many different head wounds are you aware of that
7 the child Minor had?

8 A Well, it looked like there were three to four impacts.

9 Q In the same part of the head, or is it different --

10 A No. Different parts of the head.

11 Q Is it possible he could have gotten hit more than one
12 time in the same location?

13 A Yes.

14 Q Are you able to look at the medical records and the
15 autopsy records and determine if any of those blows are the
16 single cause of death?

17 A Well, any one of them may have been sufficient, or all
18 of them, all four of them may have contributed to the sum
19 total of the bleeding in the brain. We don't know, you
20 know, which -- if there's only one or if it's a combination
21 of all of them would have been sufficient to cause the
22 abundant bleeding over the brain that was present. And so,
23 we don't necessarily say it was one impact versus another.
24 We group them together.

25 Q For instance, and I don't want to be graphic, but if

1 there were a bullet wound to the head you could specifically
2 say that was the one injury that caused the death even if
3 there were other bruises?

4 A Well, if there's -- if there's -- if it was a bullet
5 wound and this kind of injury?

6 Q Yes, ma'am.

7 A I would say that there was a blunt force and gunshot
8 wound to head, because they would both -- the blunt force
9 injuries alone would be sufficient.

10 Q Right. I really shouldn't have gotten off track, I
11 guess.

12 A Right.

13 Q But my point is it could have been all four of these
14 blows to the head or it could have been just one individual
15 with -- but these all could have been -- in other words it
16 could have been just a combination of all of them?

17 A That's correct.

18 Q And I apologize for getting off point. Were any of the
19 wounds to the head -- well, when I say bleeding I'm talking
20 externally, bleeding? Would any of them have been bleeding
21 wounds?

22 A Well, they weren't bleeding on the outside.

23 Q I'm sorry?

24 A They were not bleeding through the skin. They caused
25 internal bleeding, not bleeding like from the skin like

1 you'd put a band-aid on.

2 Q Now, would bruises like that be immediately apparent?

3 A Sometimes they are. And they're not all -- they may
4 not always be apparent.

5 Q Do bruises usually get darker over time?

6 A Frequently they do. Sometimes you know you might bang
7 your forearm or close the car door on your arm and you're
8 like ouch, and then a couple hours later it looks like, you
9 know, this major bruise. So we -- the reason that happens
10 is because when there's a bruise or a contusion, what it
11 really is is blood vessels are breaking underneath the skin
12 and blood seeps out of the blood vessels underneath the skin
13 and then it looks sort of like a bruise when you're looking
14 at the skin. But sometimes the blood doesn't always pour
15 out immediately. It can happen slowly. So depending also
16 on the pigmentation of the person, you know, it may not be
17 apparent until a little bit later on.

18 Q So sometimes bruises are -- in this case are you able
19 to a medical degree of certainty determine that the bruises
20 would have been readily apparent or over time?

21 A I can't really say 100 percent sure.

22 Q Now, the child had significant injuries on other parts
23 of his body, too, didn't he?

24 A Yes.

25 Q What were the most serious injuries that you recall to

1 the other parts of the body?

2 A Well, there were significant internal injuries to the
3 gastrointestinal tract that tore the gastrointestinal tract,
4 and that's significant, because if left untreated that would
5 have led to the child's death. That's one injury that's
6 significant.

7 Q Was that the tear in the duodenum?

8 A Yes. Duodenum is part of the gastrointestinal tract
9 that's after -- it's distal to the stomach.

10 Q Between the stomach and the intestines?

11 A Yes.

12 Q And you agree with the medical report that it appears
13 that that was torn?

14 A Yes.

15 Q What would have torn the duodenum?

16 A A blunt force impact, or punch or bruise -- significant
17 bruising to the abdomen.

18 Q Now, would the punch itself have torn the duodenum, or
19 could it have been the organ hitting the spine or a bone in
20 the back?

21 A Yeah. Well, it's all, you know, a result of an impact.
22 It's -- it could have been significant stretching of it or,
23 you know -- like it just doesn't happen without an impact,
24 so --

25 Q So it's --

1 A The exact mechanism of how it tore it's hard to know
2 exactly.

3 Q But it had to be hit hard?

4 A Yes.

5 Q Were there other injuries that were life-threatening to
6 the child?

7 A With that there's other internal injuries where there
8 was some bruising on the bladder as well, and that was also
9 from impact to the outside of the body.

10 Q Were the injuries -- you've testified to a reasonable
11 degree of medical certainty that the injuries to the head
12 were fatal?

13 A Yes.

14 Q Had there been no head injuries, were the injuries to
15 the body fatal?

16 A They would not have been fatal as quickly. They would
17 have resulted, in my opinion, in death probably in a couple
18 days time. The reason being, because the duodenum and the
19 intestines have -- we have bacteria that live inside of our
20 intestines, and they belong in the intestines. But once
21 they have a chance to escape the tube of the duodenum, or
22 the intestinal wall, and go out into the surrounding tissue
23 it causes a great deal of infection and could lead to a
24 systemic infection that -- not quickly, but it would have
25 led to -- because that's really a terrible injury when

1 there's a defect in the lumen of the bowel that causes the
2 bowel contents. It's -- you know, it's filled with bacteria
3 that belong in the bowel but not outside the bowel. So a
4 tear in the bowel wall is going to allow those bacteria into
5 the abdominal cavity, which would have caused a peritonitis
6 and then a sepsis.

7 Q If I had a tear in my abdomen that was releasing the
8 bacteria in my body would it cause me pain or discomfort?

9 A Yes.

10 Q Intense pain or just --

11 A I don't know. Some people -- historically when I know
12 that people have died of that, sometimes there are people
13 who have -- who report a lot of pain in the days prior to
14 their death, and then don't go to the doctor because they
15 figure they just had a stomach ache. And then some people
16 are like in extreme pain, and then some people don't even
17 realize it until they're virtually on the -- on death's
18 doorstep. So I don't know the degree of pain he may or may
19 not have been experiencing.

20 Q And, in fact, because of the head injury, he -- **Minor**
21 wouldn't have been going through the --

22 A Right. That's right.

23 Q That would have been down the line, had it not?

24 A Right. If he had them in sequence and about the same
25 time, the head injury would have resulted him not

1 complaining. He would have passed out really very quickly
2 after the head injury and not experienced the abdominal
3 pain.

4 Q That leads to my next question. After a head injury
5 like that -- we'll do it backwards. After a body injury
6 like that would the child be conscious during the body
7 injuries? Well, is there any way to determine whether the
8 head injuries occurred before the body injuries or the other
9 way around?

10 A No. They're approximate to each other in time.

11 Q They're at the same time but --

12 A Yeah, very close to each other, so that I can't -- we
13 can't tell.

14 Q No way to tell?

15 A There's no way to tell which one actually came first
16 and which one came second. But they're in the same time
17 span.

18 Q So is it possible the child had been hit in the head
19 first and then kicked while he was on the floor not
20 responsive? Would that have cause the same -- or hit?

21 A Repeat the question, please.

22 Q It's possible the injuries to the body occurred first
23 and the injury to the head occurred last?

24 A Yes.

25 Q Is it possible that he was hit in the head first and

1 then continued to be beaten while he was laying down or
2 unconscious on the ground?

3 A Yes.

4 Q As long as it was close enough in proximity, which
5 these were --

6 A Yes.

7 Q -- that he could have been beaten while he was laying
8 down on the ground or he could have been beaten while he was
9 standing up?

10 A That's correct.

11 Q Would the child have been in pain -- assuming the
12 beating to the body occurred first, would he have been in
13 pain?

14 A I would think that would have caused significant pain.

15 Q Would he be crying out?

16 A Yes.

17 Q No question he'd be suffering?

18 A Yes.

19 Q How long after he took -- **Minor** took that head
20 injury, or all of them together, how long would he have
21 remained conscious?

22 A It's hard to know exactly, but I believe it would have
23 been very quickly that he would have lost consciousness.
24 Like --

25 Q Is it possible he could have stumbled a few steps or

1 even gone to another room?

2 A Well, you know, I don't think he's going to be going
3 out playing ball. Let's put it that way. He might have
4 collapsed, passed out immediately, or it may have been, you
5 know -- he may have potentially be able to walk to another
6 room.

7 Q But not much beyond that?

8 A Right. Because, remember, these impacts caused
9 bleeding in the brain, and bleedings happen fairly quickly.
10 So once there's enough blood in the head -- it doesn't take
11 that much to cause somebody to lose consciousness.

12 Q Does that cause dizziness?

13 A Well, before -- from him being fully awake to his being
14 passed out, probably he would have had a period where he
15 felt subjectively dizzy. I mean, I don't -- sometimes
16 people pass out immediately from those. So we can't say
17 that he definitely was able to walk afterwards, but he
18 potentially could have been.

19 Q Would that have caused vomiting?

20 A Yes. And I'll explain to the jury why head injuries
21 cause vomiting. One of the -- one of the things we know is
22 that when there is bleeding in the brain -- and remember,
23 the head is a closed space. Right? So we don't have a lot
24 of room for the brain to start swelling. Between blood
25 accumulation and swelling of the brain that happens from the

1 impact, there's something called increased intracranial
2 pressure. Okay? Because it's a fixed space, there's more
3 pressure in the head than there's supposed to be. And
4 whenever there's increased intracranial pressure it's a
5 physiologic response that causes vomiting.

6 Q So the short answer is yes, that head injuries like
7 this could very well lead to vomiting?

8 A Yes. It would be expected.

9 Q Now, there was food found -- undigested food found in
10 the child's stomach. Is that consistent with your
11 investigation?

12 A Yeah, I read that there was.

13 Q From the doctor's report?

14 A Yes, from the autopsy report.

15 Q What would that indicate to you?

16 A Well, that the beating to the head occurred sometime
17 after the food was eating, because the child's not going to
18 be eating after the head injury. But close enough to the
19 mealtime so that the food did not clear the stomach yet.

20 Q How long does it take a normal person to clear food
21 from their stomach into their intestines?

22 A Usually by a couple of hours it's passed out of the
23 stomach.

24 Q Now, could the injury -- the internal injuries also
25 have shut down the digestive tract? Now, what is the muscle

1 called that pushes food out of the stomach? I can't really
2 -- it starts with a P or something.

3 A Yeah, the pyloric sphincter.

4 Q Out of the stomach?

5 A Oh, yeah. Well, the -- what's the muscle called that
6 --

7 Q I just remember Dr. Ross talking about a muscle that
8 moves food through the body and I can't remember. So I was
9 just --

10 A It's okay. I don't know what specifically she was
11 talking about. I mean, the stomach is actually a muscular
12 organ. So stomachs can -- can contract on its own. So
13 between that and also the digestive enzymes in the stomach
14 it helps force it through.

15 Q Dr. Ross indicated that it could have been his internal
16 injuries, not just the head injuries but the internal
17 injuries could have shut down the digestion of the food.
18 Was that --

19 A Yes, that can happen as well.

20 Q There was significant internal bleeding of this child,
21 wasn't there?

22 A Yes.

23 Q And, in fact, there was bruising even on the stomach?

24 A Yes.

25 Q Have you ever seen bruising on the stomach before?

1 A Unfortunately, yes.

2 Q But it would be rare?

3 A Well, it's from impact.

4 Q How long after **Minor** was struck in the head did he
5 live, just to a degree of -- reasonable degree of medical
6 science -- certainty.

7 A Yeah. Within a period of minutes he would have been
8 dead.

9 Q Now, we seem to have been debating what minutes means
10 in this case. What does minutes mean to you as a
11 pathologist?

12 A Well, we don't -- we don't know exactly, but it could
13 have been anywhere from a couple of minutes until he really
14 died up until potentially, you know, up to an hour or so,
15 because he's not going to be conscious but there may have
16 still been some heartbeat until he actually stopped
17 breathing. So it's hard to know exactly how many minutes.
18 But within an hour he would have been expired.

19 Q And that is to a reasonable degree of medical certainty
20 --

21 A Yes.

22 Q -- as a pathologist?

23 A Yes.

24 Q And what's the bottom? I don't want to trap you down
25 to a specific number.

1 A Yeah.

2 Q But to a degree -- reasonable degree of medical
3 certainty, what's the quickest he could have been dead after
4 that injury?

5 A Well, the quickest could have been immediately
6 actually.

7 Q Almost immediately?

8 A Yes.

9 Q No more than an hour?

10 A Yes, sir. It could have been any time in that period.
11 I mean, the injuries themselves were fatal and non-
12 reversible. But until somebody gets them and actually dies,
13 it could be several minutes or even more than a few minutes.

14 Q Because the other organs would still be working
15 possibly as well?

16 A Well, that's right. I mean, it depends on what your
17 definition of death is as well. Right? I mean, if these
18 are non-survivable injuries, if they happened in the
19 emergency room, well, maybe he's not -- he may not have been
20 dead yet, but they still are irreversible and would lead to
21 death even -- the head injuries even with attention.

22 Q Well, that would be my question. If I actually saw the
23 wounds being inflicted on the child myself, I'm in the room,
24 I see the child being beaten, could I have then taken him to
25 the hospital after the head wounds and he would have a

1 chance?

2 A He would have a chance, yes.

3 Q But every minute passes --

4 A Every minute passes is significant because there's no
5 blood flow that's -- the brain is swollen and there's blood
6 accumulation and anoxia to the brain, lack of oxygen, that
7 causes the brain tissue to die very quickly.

8 Q Would you agree with Dr. Ross that **Minor's** death
9 should be classified as a homicide?

10 A Yes.

11 Q Now, Dr. Ross finds that the cause of death would be
12 respiratory depression. What does that mean to you?

13 A Well, respiratory depression is just a mechanism of
14 death, which means basically he stopped breathing. The
15 respiratory center is being shut down. But the respiratory
16 depression isn't very specific. It doesn't -- it's just
17 there's a -- it's a result of the blunt force injuries to
18 the head that caused him to stop breathing. But it's a
19 mechanism of death. It's not the actual underlying cause.

20 Q So respiratory depression is really almost every time
21 somebody dies, or every time somebody dies they stop
22 breathing?

23 A That's right. So sometimes we say -- like people died
24 of cardiac arrest. Cardiac arrest is nonspecific. Before
25 everybody dies they have cardiac arrest. It just means the

1 heart stopped. So in this case, respiratory depression,
2 cardiac arrest, they all basically mean that somebody's
3 dying and there's usually an underlying cause. To say
4 respiratory depression wouldn't have been sufficient to
5 explain why he died. It has to be -- that's a mechanism of
6 death. So for somebody who may be -- just theoretical --
7 you know, theoretically, if somebody takes a heroin overdose
8 they also die of respiratory depression but it's from a
9 different underlying cause.

10 Q So what was the cause -- the actual direct cause of
11 **Minor's** death?

12 A Blunt force injuries to head.

13 Q He had significant other injuries, but the blunt force
14 injury to his head killed him?

15 A Yes.

16 Q To a degree of -- to a reasonable degree of medical
17 certainty?

18 A Yes.

19 Q That's the pathology?

20 A Yes.

21 Q Now, you've seen the location of **Minor's** bruising on
22 his body?

23 A Yes.

24 Q Is it fair to say that all of the bruises would have
25 occurred under clothing locations?

1 A Yeah, their clothing normally is -- if somebody's
2 wearing usual clothes those bruises would have been hidden
3 by clothing.

4 Q And if the child were laying in bed and I came by and
5 looked at the child in the bed, is it possible I would not
6 have been able to see those injuries?

7 A That's possible.

8 Q What about if the child were under a blanket or --

9 A Yeah. Well, injuries are obscured by clothing or a
10 blanket.

11 Q And you saw the images of **Minor** at the -- when
12 **Minor** was treated by the emergency room he was still in
13 his clothing, wasn't he, or some portion of it?

14 A Yeah. I don't see images -- yeah, I don't remember if
15 I remember seeing images of the -- what he wore when he came
16 into the emergency room.

17 Q We've heard some evidence that stuff may have been
18 coming out of **Minor's** nose or throat, vomit like material
19 while he was in the carseat. Is that possible after death?

20 A Yes.

21 Q Just -- I don't want to go into -- could it be the body
22 being jostled?

23 A Yeah. Well, also if somebody has blunt force injuries
24 to the head that are sufficient enough to cause bleeding on
25 the surface of the brain you can imagine somebody might have

1 some blood coming out of their nose as well. Right? It
2 doesn't take that much to get a bloody nose. And also, in
3 combination with vomiting. So between the vomiting -- and
4 some of that bloody nose could have dripped into the mouth
5 and between the vomit. So, you know, just by gravity it
6 could be coming out of the nose and mouth after -- after
7 he's already died.

8 Q And if the child is sitting up in the carseat and I say
9 he's stopped breathing and I start doing chest compressions,
10 or what I call CPR on the child, could that also --

11 A Yes. That could -- that could definitely cause more
12 secretions and vomit to emerge from the nose and mouth.

13 Q So if I said, my God, this child's got sleep apnea or
14 is not breathing and I start pushing on his chest or stomach
15 it could push up the fluid from his stomach?

16 A Yes. That happens quite frequently actually.

17 Q Is it significant to you that the emergency room
18 physician observed that the vomit appeared to be thicker or
19 what he called congealed?

20 A Well, you know, that's kind of an objective finding of
21 theirs. I don't really know --

22 Q Subjective or --

23 A Yeah, subjective of theirs. So I wouldn't necessarily
24 know what that --

25 Q You didn't see it?

1 A I didn't see it. I really don't know if it's
2 significant. It doesn't sound significant to me at all.

3 Q As a pathologist you can't say to a reasonable degree
4 of medical science that doesn't indicate it might have been
5 sitting in his stomach for --

6 A Yeah, I have no idea.

7 Q Assuming Minor took this beating and then he got put
8 in bed or went to bed on his own, would he be getting up
9 after he went to bed from this injury at all?

10 A No.

11 Q You don't have moments where you're lucid and then go
12 back into unconsciousness and then you're lucid again?

13 A Not from this kind of injury. This kind of injury he
14 would have been out. He's not getting up to go to the
15 bathroom or do anything else.

16 Q When he closes his eyes in bed, he's never opening them
17 again?

18 A That's what I believe.

19 Q To a reasonable degree of medical science?

20 A Yes.

21 Q So if I had picked this child up from his bed and put
22 him in a carseat he wouldn't be fighting me or kicking at me
23 trying to --

24 A Not at all.

25 Q And he wouldn't be protesting don't wake me up or --

1 have you seen kids -- sometimes they don't even speak, but
2 when you wake them up they still kind of --

3 A Yeah, he's not -- he's not interacting with anybody.

4 Q Whether he's alive or not, he's as lifeless as a doll
5 in terms of moving him?

6 A Well, I believe -- I mean, in my medical opinion, after
7 suffering injuries like that to the head, he's not able to
8 interact or express, you know, his opinions or say I don't
9 want this or want that, or fight.

10 Q So several after hours -- after the fact, if I kind of
11 hit him on the shoulder and say are you all right, kid, he's
12 not going to say I'm fine?

13 A No. No. He will not respond.

14 Q Could he appear to be sleeping if he's put in a
15 carseat? What we have here is we know that the -- Theia and
16 her boyfriend --

17 MR. STUMBO: Judge, objection.

18 THE COURT: Form it as hypothetical.

19 MR. STUMBO: He's testifying.

20 MR. VERNER: I'll withdraw it as I --

21 MR. STUMBO: He's not asking a question.

22 THE COURT: Do it as a hypothetical.

23 Q Hypothetically if I woke the child up at midnight to
24 take the child for a drive to Columbia from Newberry and the
25 child was put in the carseat with the restraints on it,

1 could it appear that the child was still sleeping, if I'm
2 not the one who --

3 A Oh, if you put him in -- if you took him from bed or --

4 Q Yes, ma'am.

5 A You could potentially -- that could have been
6 misinterpreted by adults as being asleep.

7 Q Was there anything else, significant, Doctor, about
8 Minor's injuries that you were given pathology notes on?

9 A Nothing that hasn't already been discussed.

10 Q Bottom line is Minor had died within an hour after
11 the blow to the head?

12 A Yes.

13 Q Bottom line is that the injuries to the head and the
14 other injuries of the body were in the general -- same
15 general timeframe?

16 A Yes.

17 Q Possibly as one beating?

18 A Yes.

19 Q Were there any other causes of death, other injuries
20 that could have contributed to the child's death beyond the
21 head injury?

22 A No. The head injuries were responsible for his death.

23 Q He would not be lucid after he lost consciousness
24 initially? He would never come back and -

25 A That's correct.

1 MR. VERNER: The prosecutor might have questions for
2 you.

3 THE COURT: Solicitor.

4 MR. STUMBO: Thank you.

5 CROSS-EXAMINATION

6 BY MR. STUMBO:

7 Q In your practice as a pathologist do you do forensic
8 pathology that interacts with law enforcement more, or would
9 you characterize that as natural deaths, both? I mean, of
10 the 3,700 you've done.

11 A Yeah. Forensic pathology, these autopsies are all
12 autopsies that are performed because somebody was not
13 expected to die. So they're -- frequently they turn out to
14 be homicides. Frequently forensic cases turn out to be
15 natural. Frequently they're undetermined. Frequently
16 suicide. We have all sorts of causes of death. But these
17 are forensic pathology cases.

18 Q Well, how many children who have alleged to have been
19 abused have you conducted autopsies on?

20 A Many, unfortunately. A lot.

21 Q Many --

22 A Or dozens.

23 Q Now, you have a law degree, too; is that correct?

24 A Yes.

25 Q And you've practiced -- practiced law, correct?

1 A I did.

2 Q And was that practice in criminal defense firms?

3 A No. I was doing ERISA litigation.

4 Q Have you ever represent --

5 A No, I never really. I wasn't a very good lawyer and I
6 did that straight from college and I was -- I left law to go
7 to medical school. So it was kind of an intermediary step.

8 Q You never -- let's get back as far as this case. You
9 never actually participated in the autopsy in this case,
10 correct?

11 A That's correct.

12 Q When did you get involved in this case?

13 A Mr. Verner called me approximately a month ago and
14 asked me if I would review the autopsy material and records
15 on this case.

16 Q So your experience with this case was Mr. Verner asking
17 you to review Dr. Ross' autopsy results?

18 A That's correct.

19 Q The pictures as well?

20 A Yes.

21 Q Did you generate any kind of report or anything --

22 A No.

23 Q -- for Mr. Verner? So you just looked at Dr. Ross'
24 results and you're here today, correct?

25 A Yes.

1 Q Did Mr. Verner share with you his legal theory of the
2 case? I mean, you are an attorney, so did you all talk
3 about that?

4 A No. I don't think he did.

5 Q You don't think he did or he didn't?

6 A I don't remember if he did. I mean, I told him the
7 child died of blunt force injuries to the head.

8 Q Which Dr. Ross had already concluded in her autopsy,
9 right?

10 A Yes. So he sent me her -- her report and the pictures
11 and everything, and I agreed with her conclusions.

12 Q You agree with her autopsy report?

13 A Yes.

14 Q Now, you testified earlier about -- at one point you
15 said injury to the head, blunt force injury to the head
16 caused the death as opposed to injuries or impacts to the
17 head. Is it -- was it multiple impacts or just one?

18 A Well, we don't -- we don't know. I mean, it could have
19 been a single one that caused the bleeding. But each one of
20 them could have led to the bleeding in the brain. So it
21 could have been any combination of the impacts to the head.
22 Impact, injury, same thing.

23 Q You're comparing the bruises found on the outside to
24 what's going on on the inside, correct?

25 A Yes.

1 Q Is it possible for there to be bleeding on the brain
2 with no bruising on the outside? Could that cause subdural
3 hematoma?

4 A Could what cause subdural hematoma?

5 Q Something other than what causes an exterior bruise.
6 Let me give you a hypothetical, doctor. If an adult comes
7 up to a child, grabs the head, throws it against a soft
8 surface, which doesn't cause an external injury but it
9 causes the brain to rattle inside of the head and causes
10 those little blood vessels to burst, that's possible that
11 you could have subdural hematoma that's not directly
12 connected to an injury on the outside, right?

13 A In my experience subdural hematomas in somebody who's
14 skull has already formed, such as a three-year-old, wouldn't
15 be associated with a skull contusion. It's not as common for
16 -- like an acceleration, deceleration type injury to cause
17 bleeding on the surface on the brain in an injured child.

18 Q But it's possible?

19 A I believe it would be possible, but not -- there were
20 bruises on the head.

21 Q Well, and speaking of those bruises on the head, is
22 there any way scientifically to age any one of those
23 bruises?

24 A Visually, they -- scientifically they -- if they were
25 older than a certain time period you could potentially age

1 them by looking at tissue under the microscope. But in this
2 case that wasn't -- I don't have any -- I wasn't provided
3 any of that.

4 Q So there's a way, you're telling me, scientifically to
5 day exactly how old a bruise is?

6 A No, I didn't say that it was scientifically possible to
7 say exactly how old. But if it's older, let's say, than,
8 you know, a day, or 36 hours actually, then hemosiderin,
9 which is the blood cells, start to break down and there's
10 some pigment. Within between zero and 36 hours we wouldn't
11 be able to tell if it was new.

12 Q But you indicated earlier that all of these injuries --
13 I think Mr. Verner asked you this. These injuries to
14 Minor's body -- which were multiple? You'd agree with
15 that? Multiple injuries?

16 A Yes.

17 Q Did they all happen in the same timeframe?

18 A Well, they could have.

19 Q Could have.

20 A Yeah.

21 Q But there's no way to really tell that?

22 A Well, let me tell you why I believe that they were.
23 Because if there was injury to the abdomen that caused this
24 duodenum tear, and the child was continuing to live with the
25 leakage of the bacteria found in the GI tract from the

DR. ELLEN RIEMER: CROSS-EXAMINATION

971

1 duodenum, there would start to be some inflammation of the
2 peritoneum because of the bacteria leaking out. And that
3 wasn't apparent at the autopsy as described by Dr. Ross.
4 Nor did -- I saw the inner surface of the body in the
5 autopsy pictures and it did not look like there was any
6 peritonitis developing. And so, I think it makes the most
7 sense that this would all have been in approximate time
8 period.

9 Q Yeah, approximate time period. It's possible this
10 could have happened over a series of hours, correct?

11 A It's possible, yes.

12 Q So in other words, throughout that day --

13 A So it's possible it could have been from the same
14 beating event or it could have been over a period of time.

15 Q There's no way medically you can testify that it all
16 happened in the same beating?

17 A That's correct.

18 Q It could have happened in a series of beatings over a
19 course of hours, correct?

20 A That's correct.

21 Q I just wanted to make sure, because you said to Mr.
22 Verner all the injuries in your medical opinion happened
23 around the same time.

24 A Well, there was nothing to indicate otherwise.

25 Q I just wanted to make sure that I'm correct on this

1 though. You did testify that they could have happened --
2 it's medical possible that they could happen over a longer
3 period of time.

4 A Well, you know, after the -- if the beating to the
5 abdomen came first, that would have resulted in, you know,
6 crying and pain, and that would have been apparent to
7 somebody.

8 Q The one thing, and I believe Mr. Verner asked you about
9 the fact that there was food still in the stomach, correct?

10 A Yes.

11 Q That we can use that as kind of a benchmark for when
12 either an injury to the head or the body that created the
13 digestive system to slow down.

14 A Yes.

15 Q That we can kind of date from the time he got the
16 injuries that caused his digestive system to slow down in
17 relation to when he ate the food, correct?

18 A That's correct. So really it's -- so the question is,
19 yes, if once the beating to the stomach occurred or the
20 beating to the head occurred it would have caused the food
21 to not have been readily digested.

22 Q If there was testimony that suggested that the beating
23 that caused the digestive system to shut down happened
24 within 30 minutes of the time a child ate, then would you
25 agree with that medically?

1 A It would make sense medically.

2 Q So that would seem to indicate that it happened -- at
3 least some of this beating that occurred to cause his body
4 to shut down occurred sometime around dinnertime, right?

5 A After dinner.

6 Q Shortly after dinner?

7 A Right. Sometime before food cleared from the stomach
8 which could have been up to a couple of hours.

9 Q Because if it was a long time after dinner the food
10 would have already been digested through the system?

11 A Through the system.

12 Q So food in the stomach does give us somewhat of a
13 benchmark on some of these injuries, correct?

14 A Yes.

15 Q Now again, let's go back to the injuries on the head.
16 You said that -- you did testify you agreed with Dr. Ross
17 that the blunt force injury that caused the subdural
18 hematoma was what was the cause of death here?

19 A Yes.

20 Q Timeframe-wise you said that could have happened within
21 minutes of which -- which impact?

22 A Any of them.

23 Q Do we -- is there any way for us to tell exactly when
24 this child died? We know what the legal -- declared dead at
25 the hospital at 2:06.

1 A Right.

2 Q But do you know how long before that 2:06 point that he
3 actually passed away?

4 A No. No.

5 Q And there's no way scientifically to narrow that down?

6 A Well, it's not that there's no way. But I don't -- you
7 know, somebody in the emergency room might have been able to
8 assess the temperature of the child. You know, a child who
9 was cold already, that wouldn't have happened immediately.
10 After somebody dies it takes a while for temperature to
11 equalibrate with environmental temperature. I mean, you can
12 actually figure that out scientifically, but I don't have
13 that information. So I can't make a decision on -- I can't
14 -- I don't really have an opinion on how long the child had
15 actually died prior to the arrival at the emergency room.

16 Q Dr. Riemer, did you have -- you said you didn't have
17 the information. Did you have the ER notes from Newberry
18 Hospital? Dr. Holaday's medical records?

19 A Yes. Yes.

20 Q And that indicates when the child was brought in he was
21 cold to the touch --

22 A Yes.

23 Q -- right away, correct?

24 A Yes.

25 Q So you did have that information? That would indicate

1 that --

2 A Yeah. It didn't happen immediately prior to -- it was
3 enough time for his body to have cooled off.

4 Q How long scientifically does it take the body to cool
5 off after death?

6 A Well, that can actually be calculated. But I did not
7 calculate it in this case. It depends on the surface area
8 and -- but probably within a couple of hours.

9 Q Within a couple of hours of the time that he hits the
10 ER and is cold to the touch to the ER doctor, correct?

11 A Yes, approximately. I don't know exactly how long it
12 would have taken.

13 Q You indicated earlier, you know, that you said the
14 injuries were compelling, not conclusive, and I can't be 100
15 percent sure.

16 A That was when he was -- Mr. Verner was asking me about
17 the hand marks on the body. That I thought those strongly
18 resembled a hand slap, or a squeezing. So I did -- that's
19 what I was referring to. So ask me -- please ask me
20 whatever you wish.

21 MR. STUMBO: Mr. Bentley, could you pull up State's No.
22 1, please. If you need to step down, Doctor, you can, or if
23 you can see it. Either way.

24 (Whereupon, the witness stepped down from the witness
25 stand.)

1 Q When did these injuries occur? Can we -- or do we
2 know?

3 A No, I don't know. Yeah, that doesn't have a hand
4 pattern. There's no fingers in that.

5 Q And I believe earlier you testified there was bruising
6 on the bladder. But Dr. Ross's report actually says that
7 there was hemorrhage -- or hemorrhaging or bleeding around
8 the bladder, right?

9 A That is the same thing. Bruising and bleeding.
10 Bruising only occurs when bleeding.

11 Q Right. But there was actual hemorrhage or hematoma or
12 a section of blood around there, too, right?

13 A Yes.

14 Q And she said it was a bruise on the stomach, right?

15 A Yes.

16 Q And a bruise on the pancreas.

17 A Yes. These are all the same things as hematomas or
18 hemorrhages.

19 Q But she specified that there was blood. And there was
20 actually pictures of that.

21 A Yes.

22 Q You reviewed the autopsy photos, right?

23 A Yes.

24 Q And there's bleeding around the bladder area?

25 A Yes.

DR. ELLEN RIEMER: CROSS-EXAMINATION

977

1 Q So bleeding internally?

2 A Yes.

3 Q But there's no way to tell when this injury occurred in
4 relation to when the injuries occurred on the head, right?

5 A Well, not -- they could have all been at the same time,
6 but I can't say for sure.

7 Q Could this have been caused the day before he died?

8 A Potentially, yes.

9 Q Is it possible that if this happened right before death
10 or within a short time period before death that this much
11 bruising would already be apparent on the exterior?

12 A Well, if he's wearing clothes it's possible that it may
13 not have been apparent.

14 Q Well, I don't mean by --

15 A But this bruising --

16 Q -- someone else. I mean, medically -- and maybe I'm
17 just speaking from layman's terms. If somebody comes up and
18 punches me --

19 A Yes.

20 Q -- on the arm, the bruise doesn't show up right way.
21 It comes sometime later, right?

22 A Frequently.

23 Q Most of the time?

24 A Yes.

25 Q That's just my experience.

1 A And here, this could have happened -- until the
2 bleeding started to accumulate it could have been a little
3 while.

4 Q Have you ever seen a child's genitals this swollen, Dr.
5 Riemer?

6 A No.

7 Q So there was obviously extreme trauma --

8 A Right.

9 Q -- to this child's genitals?

10 A This was a terrible injury.

11 Q Based on the darkness and severity of this, this could
12 have happened, as you just said, hours before?

13 A Potentially, yes.

14 Q Maybe even the day before?

15 A I can't tell.

16 Q The bruise on his stomach.

17 MR. STUMBO: If you can pull up -- Mr. Bentley, if you
18 could pull up State's 124.

19 Q This is the bruise to the stomach, right, Dr. Riemer?

20 A Yes.

21 Q Is there any way for us to tell when that bruise --
22 when the injury, or the trauma happened to cause this
23 bruise?

24 A Not by looking at the bruise. But you remember the
25 belief that there wouldn't be clearing of food from the

1 stomach once that happened. So this bruise most likely
2 happened after eating.

3 Q So if we had a timeframe of dinnertime, the last meal
4 --

5 A Right.

6 Q Then we could -- we could somewhat narrow down when
7 that injury occurred, within --

8 A Right. I mean, all of these injuries, even the
9 injuries to the genitals, would have been sufficiently
10 traumatic that the food would have basically not been
11 digested. So even that would have -- I don't believe it was
12 the day before, because he's eating food. I mean, I think he
13 would have been in severe pain. He's not eating food after
14 that. And that food would have not been able to be digested
15 after that. So I don't think that the bruise to either the
16 genitals or the stomach occurred prior to his eating.

17 Q You don't think the injuries to the genitals happened
18 prior to dinner?

19 A Well, prior to his eating.

20 Q To him eating dinner?

21 A Well, yeah, because I believe that there would have
22 been significant slow down of the gastric -- of the stomach
23 digestion. That's a very severe injury. And, you know,
24 whether he'd even be able to eat after that is questionable,
25 because he would really be in pain.

1 Q What if it happened many hours before, the day before,
2 the bruising shows up the next day but then he eats and he
3 gets hit on the stomach?

4 A Well, I guess that means those things are possible.

5 Q I mean, in other words --

6 A I guess any of those things are possible. To me, a
7 child would be in severe pain after these injuries and would
8 not be eating dinner quietly.

9 Q The punch to the stomach could have happened even a day
10 apart from the punch to the genitals possibly?

11 A Well, I think the -- anything is possible. This is all
12 possible. And I don't believe that a punch to the stomach
13 or the injuries to the genitals are going to lead to the
14 child being like, you know, able to eat in a normal manner.
15 I think he would have been in pain. I mean, it's possible
16 that he carried on and ate dinner and with these kinds of
17 injuries, but I don't think that's likely.

18 Q Caused him to vomit possibly after he tried to eat with
19 those kind of injuries?

20 A Well, it's possible, yes. I mean, I think maybe he
21 wouldn't have even wanted to eat. It's possible he could
22 have vomited after eating. But it makes more sense that he
23 would have eaten. I mean, it's not -- it's not -- what
24 you're saying isn't possible. It's absolutely possible.
25 But I think a child who had sustained that kind of injury to

DR. ELLEN RIEMER: CROSS-EXAMINATION

981

1 the stomach and the genitals and internal bleeding is not
2 going to be eating a meal. It just doesn't make quite so
3 much sense. I mean, it's possible, yes. He -- maybe it's
4 possible that he could have done that and he was not really
5 feeling as much pain as we would imagine he would. But I
6 think that those kinds of injuries would have -- would have
7 caused him not to be acting normally afterward.

8 Q But he could have? He could have been sluggish --

9 A Well, it's always possible, yes. I don't think a child
10 would -- in so much pain is going to be eating his dinner.
11 So it makes the most sense to me that this -- the beating to
12 the abdomen and the -- if they -- it occurred around the
13 same time, that it occurred after eating. And that makes
14 the most sense. And the food isn't going to be leaving the
15 stomach. It's just -- like these kinds of injuries. I
16 mean, somebody gets beaten up is not going to be standing
17 and eating his dinner. I think he's going to be in pain and
18 not going to be eating.

19 Q But you said if the injuries occurred all at the same
20 time. But we don't know. We can't tell that medically,
21 right?

22 A Well, medically I can. But, you know, we can sort of
23 -- we can't say with certainty. But I do not believe he
24 would have sustained these sorts of injuries and been
25 playing and eating and interacting normally after sustaining

1 them. I think he would have been in pain. The duodenum
2 injuries and the genital injuries are going to be
3 significantly painful for him that I don't think he's going
4 to be sitting down and -- they're not -- they're going to be
5 apparent because he's going to be screaming. If they
6 happened a significant time period before the head injury
7 he's going to let people know he's in pain. He's not going
8 to be eating and like oh, my, how did you get that. It
9 happened -- it happened after eating.

10 Q But you can't medically tell us that? That's just
11 speculation?

12 A Well, you know, we know about human behavior. I'm not
13 -- I mean, I'm a physician and people in severe pain don't
14 carry on normal activities. So I would say it's more likely
15 than not. I can't say for sure to a reasonable degree of
16 medical certainty. But I would certainly, in my expert
17 opinion, he would have eaten and then suffered these
18 injuries. Because I don't believe he would be eating his
19 meal after sustaining all these injuries.

20 Q Just another hypothetical then, Doctor. How about if
21 it's a child that had been abused over a long period of time
22 repeatedly since he was young and it was just normal --
23 normal every day life for him.

24 A This could have been his normal every day life. But
25 these kinds of injuries would not -- if somebody had these

DR. ELLEN RIEMER: REDIRECT EXAMINATION

983

1 sorts of injuries I think he may have died previously. I
2 mean, he had internal bleeding to the duodenum. I don't
3 think that this kind of beating is compatible with somebody
4 with life. And he does go to the doctor. He does go see a
5 doctor. I don't think he -- I think it would have been
6 observed -- observed, or he would have complained. Even if
7 it's his everyday abuse, he's in pain and I think there's a
8 physiologic response to that.

9 Q Is there any way for you to be able to tell medically
10 which person caused these injuries to this child?

11 A Absolutely not.

12 Q So you can't say if there were two people there during
13 this time period which one it could have been?

14 A I have no idea. That's correct.

15 MR. STUMBO: Thank you, doctor. You may return to the
16 witness stand.

17 MR. VERNER: Just a few follow-up.

18 MR. STUMBO: No, I'm not --

19 (Whereupon, the witness returned to the witness stand.)

20 MR. STUMBO: I'm almost done, Your Honor.

21 Q You testified for -- you said you've been qualified as
22 an expert in the state. Is that typically under a retainer
23 from either the State or the Defense?

24 A No. No. I testify in Court. It's when I -- when I do
25 an autopsy. I do a lot of forensic autopsies for many

1 counties in the eastern half of the state, and I'm
2 frequently called by the Solicitor to testify as to my
3 autopsy findings and to the cause and manner of death. It's
4 not a retainer situation.

5 Q When you do the autopsy. But I'm referring to when you
6 come in as in this one. You review records and testify --

7 A Well, that's very rare. I actually haven't done that
8 before. So I don't -- I'm not, you know, going out and
9 doing this as part of my -- I'm not reviewing other peoples'
10 cases and being admitted as an expert. This is actually the
11 first time I've ever done this.

12 Q But you're getting a fee in this case?

13 A Well, not -- my department is actually charging and my
14 -- it's not coming directly to me. My department is
15 charging for my time, not -- in my opinion, I said this is a
16 homicide and blunt force, and I gave them -- I have my
17 opinion and my opinion is not being purchased.

18 MR. STUMBO: Thank you, Doctor.

19 THE COURT: Any redirect?

20 REDIRECT EXAMINATION

21 BY MR. VERNER:

22 Q And really your opinion is the same as the State's
23 witness, the pathologist?

24 A That the cause of death is blunt force injury to the
25 head.

1 Q Just a few items. Does it sometime take food -- food
2 clears from your stomach usually in about an hour or --

3 A It actually depends on the various factors. So to pin
4 it down to an exact timeframe is very difficult. It depends
5 on the kind of food, the volume of food. Eating a very
6 small meal it actually would clear more quickly than a large
7 volume of food. And, you know, food that's fattier also
8 takes longer to clear.

9 Q So if we all eat like steak where it just sits on your
10 stomach, food doesn't always clear at the same --

11 A That's right. It's not like it's all there and two
12 hours it's gone. It's sort of a gradual digestive process.

13 Q So it takes sometimes longer than an hour to clear out
14 the stomach?

15 A Yes.

16 Q But what's the most that's reasonable?

17 A Usually by a couple of hours, if a meal is really
18 massive.

19 Q So two or three hours is when the stomach clears
20 completely?

21 A Approximately.

22 Q And we're not just talking about -- if this injury
23 happened the day before and we're talking about, you know,
24 the supper beforehand, breakfast the next day, lunch. We're
25 not just talking about one meal that you're saying he

1 wouldn't eat. We're talking about multiple meals this child
2 would have had to eat, assuming he was eating? The
3 Solicitor's question that you answered if the injury
4 happened a day beforehand, how many meals would people
5 typically eat in a day?

6 A Three.

7 Q And you don't have to be a pathologist to know that, do
8 you?

9 A No.

10 Q So we're talking multiple meals that this child would
11 have eaten after these injuries if they happened --

12 A That's right, and if he was eating.

13 Q But have you seen anything to suggest that these
14 injuries did not happen as Dr. Ross testified as part of the
15 same incident?

16 A Yeah, I'd have no reason to think that they did not.
17 Yeah, they're perfectly consistent. And again, as I
18 mentioned, if the abdominal injuries were significant --
19 were prior to his eating, I don't think he would have been
20 eating. If he had these abdominal injuries and the groin
21 injury he's not going to be eating meals. So I believe that
22 it makes most sense that he -- that it was -- the injuries
23 all occurred after.

24 Q After dinner?

25 A Yes.

1 Q Because he was -- he went to the hospital at some point
2 about 1:30 in the morning the following day. So the last
3 meal we're talking about would have been dinner the night
4 beforehand?

5 A Yes.

6 Q So we can break down the timeframe that sometime 30
7 minutes to a couple hours after dinner until he was found
8 dead at the hospital?

9 A Yeah. I nothing to think that that wouldn't -- that
10 wouldn't be accurate.

11 Q Did you see -- the Solicitor just raised this
12 allegation. But we know Theia slapped the child and had a
13 DSS intervention in April of 2013. Did that cause **Minor**
14 McArdle's death?

15 A No.

16 Q Did it contribute to **Minor's** death?

17 A No.

18 Q Did you see any other injuries, broken bones, cracked
19 teeth, any other injuries on that child's body that were
20 separate and apart from the injuries that were inflicted as
21 part of his death?

22 A Well, I didn't -- I didn't see any recorded by the
23 pathologist.

24 Q Do you think a pathologist doing a study of the child
25 would have noted other -- more injuries?

1 A Yes, definitely.

2 Q Have you seen anything from the medical records
3 indicating a pattern of ongoing beatings over the course of
4 the last year?

5 A No.

6 Q So that would -- it's fair to say it's just pure
7 speculation?

8 A Yes.

9 Q I don't know the answer to this, but the child's groin
10 is severely discolored. Could the penis have gotten that
11 swollen from a punch or would it have taken other type of --
12 could it have been grabbed real hard and that caused it? Is
13 there any way for you to tell? I don't know. That's my
14 question.

15 A Well, it probably -- I don't know if it's a single
16 event that caused that. It could have been grabbed and
17 punched, because there is bleeding around the bladder. So
18 it could have been that there was a punch and a second punch
19 or -- I don't know exactly. But --

20 Q But it's severe?

21 A Yes.

22 Q And I don't know the -- I would think the duodenum
23 would be kind of up closer to the stomach, but is the injury
24 to the abdomen, could that have contributed to the bleeding
25 on the inside or would it have had to be the child would

1 have been beating kind of further up the abdomen?

2 A Well, what exactly -- you're asking me about the
3 abdominal tear?

4 Q Yes, Doctor. The internal injuries --

5 A Yes.

6 Q -- were those caused from hitting the child in the
7 groin area or would those have been caused from strikes
8 further up in the child's body, or it's just impossible?

9 A Well, I would think the bladder bleeding, the bladder
10 hematoma, was associated with injury to the brain area, and
11 the injury to the duodenum and the pancreas could have been
12 from other -- I mean, he's a child. So it doesn't
13 necessarily -- I can't say specifically from what injury.
14 They're kind of all mixed together.

15 Q But the most severe beating would be the groin area?

16 A Now, that's very -- I mean, most -- it depends on what
17 you mean by most severe. The injuries that killed him are
18 the blunt force injuries to the head. But those certainly
19 are horrible.

20 Q But by injury I just meant patterns of bruising.

21 A Well, they're very severe. But, you know, the internal
22 injuries to the duodenum are also significant that may not
23 have been associated with a severe visually on the external
24 part of the body. So, you know, I can't say, well, one was
25 worse than the other. I mean, they're all there. And

1 sometimes a significant internal injury, or something that
2 appears really bad on the outside isn't necessarily
3 associated with as severe an internal injury. But we have
4 significant internal and external injuries here.

5 MR. VERNER: Doctor, I appreciate you coming to
6 Newberry. The Solicitor might have --

7 MR. STUMBO: Very brief, Judge.

8 RECROSS-EXAMINATION

9 BY MR. STUMBO:

10 Q Dr. Riemer, would it be fair to say -- would you agree
11 with this statement, that the more severe the trauma to the
12 head the more quickly death would occur?

13 A Well --

14 Q Well, let me back up.

15 A -- you know, that's actually -- you can't -- you would
16 never disagree with that because severity would be judged by
17 how quickly it would occur. So you would say though it had
18 caused somebody to die quickly then it was very severe, and
19 if it didn't, then it would be less severe. So it's kind of
20 impossible. It's almost like a truism that the more severe
21 it was the more quickly somebody would have died. It's not
22 -- I can't say -- it doesn't make sense to me to disagree
23 with that.

24 Q The amount of blood on **Minor's** head, based on your
25 review of the autopsy, did that indicate a significant

DR. ELLEN RIEMER: RECROSS-EXAMINATION

991

1 amount of blood on the head, or on the brain, excuse me?

2 A Yes.

3 Q I believe that was approximately 25 CCs?

4 A That's what she said.

5 Q No skull fractures?

6 A That's correct.

7 Q Small bruising on the head, correct?

8 A Well, there was bruising, yeah. I mean, the size of
9 the bruise doesn't necessarily -- the size of the bruise on
10 the skin doesn't necessarily say how great an impact it was.

11 Q Twenty-five CCs though is not a massive hemorrhaging on
12 the brain though?

13 A Well, that actually is quite a bit.

14 Q And that could come out slowly over a period of time or
15 --

16 A Well, 25 CCs is really -- that was measured --
17 sometimes there's a little bit of blood that's lost when the
18 skull is open, but that's actually a lot of blood in a
19 child's head. There's a closed structure. In a fully grown
20 adult the general accepted thought is that -- medical
21 thought is that 50 milliliters is blood on the brain that
22 accumulates acutely, as opposed to like over years or days
23 -- that accumulates acutely would be enough to cause
24 herniation of the brain which is pushing the brain through
25 some of the bony spaces at the base of the brain. So 28, or

1 very close to 30 in a child who's not fully grown, it's
2 actually quite a significant amount. So it doesn't sound
3 significant if you're going to have a glass of, you know,
4 water or put it in a glass. It's going to be a couple
5 tablespoons. But it's actually -- for a head that's a lot
6 of blood to accommodate.

7 Q Is it possibly medically, Doctor, for that 25 CCs to
8 accumulate on the brain over a period of time?

9 A Well, no, because we would have been able to see that
10 there was some organization of the blood and some yellowing
11 of the blood. It looks all like acute hemorrhage. So I
12 disagree with that. Based on my viewing of the pictures it
13 looked like it all occurred and it was from a -- it was a
14 single time. It wasn't bleeding, and then more bleeding and
15 then all bleeding. It all looked about the same age. We
16 don't have areas where there's clotted blood. It's all
17 fresh blood.

18 Q Right. But what I'm saying those is that bleeding
19 could have happened -- acutely, what do you mean by that? I
20 mean, could you explain that to the jury? What do you mean?

21 A Yes. Like -- we're talking like not over days.

22 Q But possibly over hours? Acute injury could be over
23 hours, correct?

24 A Potentially.

25 MR. STUMBO: No further questions, Judge.

1 REDIRECT EXAMINATION

2 BY MR. VERNER:

3 Q But you testified and you agree with Dr. Ross that the
4 child died within minutes of that --

5 A Yes. I believe that once the head injuries occurred
6 there's bleeding on the brain. The child is not responding
7 after that.

8 MR. VERNER: Thank you, Doctor for coming.

9 MR. STUMBO: Nothing further, Judge.

10 MR. VERNER: Thank you, Doctor.

11 THE COURT: I was trying to get clarification. You
12 were kind of standing -- the jury, I'm sure, heard you when
13 you were standing over there. I had some difficulty hearing
14 some of what you said. And just so I'm straight on what
15 you're testifying to. To a reasonable degree of medical
16 certainty, it's your opinion that all the injuries took
17 place together and would have taken place within two or
18 three hours? Assuming he ate -- assuming that the child ate
19 steak, some bread and some corn for supper, those injuries
20 would have taken place within two to three hours after -- or
21 30 minutes to three hours after having eaten supper?

22 THE WITNESS: After eating, yes.

23 THE COURT: Very good. Thank you, Doctor. No
24 follow-up based on these questions?

25 MR. STUMBO: No follow-up, Your Honor.

THEIA MCARDLE: DIRECT EXAMINATION

994

1 THE COURT: None from the State. Doctor, thank you for
2 coming. You are free to go. Pleasure to meet you.

3 All right. Ladies and gentlemen, we're going to take a
4 brief -- well, 10 minute break. If you want to step
5 outside, that's fine. Just be back in here, if you would,
6 at 12:00 and we'll resume at that particular point in time.
7 Don't talk about the case yet. Thank you.

8 (Whereupon, the jury exited the courtroom at 11:48
9 a.m.)

10 THE COURT: I'm assuming, Mr. Verner, that your client
11 is still intending to testify at this point?

12 MR. VERNER: Yes, sir. But I was going to take a last
13 five minute break, or two minute break, to find out --

14 THE COURT: No, that's fine. I just wanted to -- let
15 me know what you all decide when I come back then.

16 MR. VERNER: Your Honor, if I can, I'm going to take
17 her back to --

18 THE COURT: Certainly.

19 MR. VERNER: -- my office.

20 (Whereupon, a recess was held from 11:48 a.m. to 12:05
21 p.m.)

22 THE COURT: We'll go back on the record then. Mr.
23 Verner just informed the Court that he does intend to call
24 the Defendant as a witness. You understand the
25 ramifications of this, Ms. McArdle, correct?

THEIA MCARDLE: DIRECT EXAMINATION

995

1 THE DEFENDANT: Yes, sir.

2 THE COURT: Let's have the jury, please.

3 (Whereupon, the jury entered the courtroom at 12:05
4 p.m.)

5 THE COURT: The jury is back and seated. At this
6 point, Mr. Verner, call your next witness, please.

7 MR. VERNER: Your Honor, I call Theia McArdle.

8 THE COURT: Come forward, please, ma'am.

9 THEIA MCARDLE, having been first
10 duly sworn, testified as follows:

11 DIRECT EXAMINATION

12 BY MR. VERNER:

13 Q Theia, I'm going to ask you questions from here to make
14 sure that everybody can hear you. Okay?

15 A Okay.

16 Q How old are you, Theia?

17 A Twenty-two now.

18 Q Were are you from?

19 A Asheville, North Carolina.

20 Q You're the mother of the child Minor

21 A Yes.

22 Q How old were you when Minor was born?

23 A Eighteen. I just turned 18, I think.

24 Q So I assume you were pregnant when you were 17 then?

25 A Yes.

THEIA MCARDLE: DIRECT EXAMINATION

996

1 Q Is Richard Bowman the father of your child?

2 A No.

3 Q When did you and -- so Minor was born when again?

4 A December 30th of 2011.

5 Q Where did you live when Minor was born?

6 A The day he was born I was living with my mother off of
7 -- I think it was was a place. Less than a month
8 after that I got my own apartment which my mother moved into
9 with me in --

10 Q In Asheville?

11 A Yes. In public subsidized housing.

12 Q I'm going to move forward a little bit. When did you
13 move to South Carolina?

14 A August or September of 2014.

15 Q Where did you move to in South Carolina?

16 A Originally it was Spartanburg. I was -- the first
17 hotel I stayed at was a pay by the week place by the name of
18 Royal Inn & Suites off of Boiling Springs Road in
19 Spartanburg, South Carolina.

20 Q Who came with you to South Carolina?

21 A My son, Minor and my co-defendant Richard
22 Bowman.

23 Q He would be your boyfriend at the time?

24 A Pimp.

25 Q Did you also have a relationship with him?

THEIA MCARDLE: DIRECT EXAMINATION

997

1 A If you could call it that, but yes.

2 Q Well, how did you support yourself?

3 A I was a prostitute.

4 Q How did you come into being a -- what lead you to that
5 life?

6 A I had lost my apartment in Asheville, North Carolina
7 due to so many police incidents with Richard Bowman and his
8 destruction of property inside of my apartment. And at that
9 point I had no way to go. And I didn't have enough money
10 just with my disability income by itself so sustain an
11 apartment. Cost of living in Asheville, North Carolina is
12 pretty high. And a friend of mine by the name of Jurissa
13 Waits, whose also a friend of Bri Yarborough introduced me
14 to Back Page.

15 Q A friend of yours introduced you to --

16 A Back page.

17 Q And what is Back Page?

18 A It's a website that can advertise adult entertainment
19 services. Anything from escort strippers, massage
20 therapists, erotic massages, et cetera.

21 Q Well, I mean, do you start meeting guys first, or just
22 you start advertising to see guys? You start Back Page
23 first?

24 A You advertise, and people contact you from that
25 advertisement.

1 Q And then you started doing that?

2 A Yes.

3 Q And then how old were you when you started doing that?

4 A I think I was 20 then.

5 Q Now, do you -- is this before or after you got into a
6 relationship with Richard Bowman?

7 A This is in the midst of the relationship.

8 Q So you had started doing that even prior to Richard or
9 after you had started --

10 A When I first met him I was not -- I didn't have to
11 escort. But it was in the middle of the relationship when I
12 was about to be homeless with a child.

13 Q How long after you started seeing Richard did you two
14 move in together?

15 A It would have been very long. It would have been maybe
16 two weeks.

17 Q Did he move in with you or did you move in with him?

18 A He moved in with me. The apartment was solely in my
19 name.

20 Q Well, you obviously let him move in, didn't you?

21 A Yes.

22 Q And you had the child Minor with you?

23 A Yes, at that point.

24 Q What was Richard doing to support himself?

25 A Nothing.

THEIA MCARDLE: DIRECT EXAMINATION

999

1 Q Well, we heard he was also on Back Page. Did he start
2 after the relationship, too, or was he doing it before?

3 A He started after I began, and he, you know, asked is
4 there male section, and I said, well, there is, but most of
5 the clientele was male.

6 Q But he started doing that, too?

7 A Yes.

8 Q Did he continue to do that through your relationship?

9 A No. He made approximately a total of seven calls, but
10 the amount of money which he made compared to the amount of
11 time that he had to spend, compared to the amount of money
12 and time that -- I could make much more than he could in a
13 very short period of time.

14 Q Women, make more money as escorts than men do?

15 A Immensely.

16 Q And the market for men is mostly other men?

17 A Yes.

18 Q Would he bring these guys back into your home or was it
19 going to meet them?

20 A We did business within the room that we stayed in,
21 which was a double bedroom at that point in time.

22 Q Are you talking about the hotel room?

23 A Yes.

24 Q Did you continue to be a Back Page escort throughout
25 the relationship?

THEIA MCARDLE: DIRECT EXAMINATION

1000

1 A Yes, I did.

2 Q So even as of the date of December 30th, 2014 you were
3 still an escort on Back Page?

4 A Yes, I was.

5 Q So you'd been doing that about, what, two or three
6 years?

7 A No.

8 Q Were you doing that prior to Minor's birth?

9 A No. Again, until I was removed -- well, evicted from
10 my apartment in Asheville I didn't have to be an escort.

11 Q At some point why did you move to the mobile home in
12 Enoree?

13 A Because I actually wanted, you know, to establish a
14 home. When you're in a hotel room you really can't
15 decorate. You can't make it your home. I mean, you can buy
16 furnishings like bed covers, some decorations, but you
17 really can't make it an actual home. I wanted to cook. I
18 wanted to do things.

19 Q How did you find the home in Enoree?

20 A It was an ad off of Craigs List.

21 Q And Richard and the child moved in with you again?

22 A Yes.

23 Q Did you receive any clientele into the home in Enoree?

24 A Yes, I did.

25 Q At other times would you go and meet people?